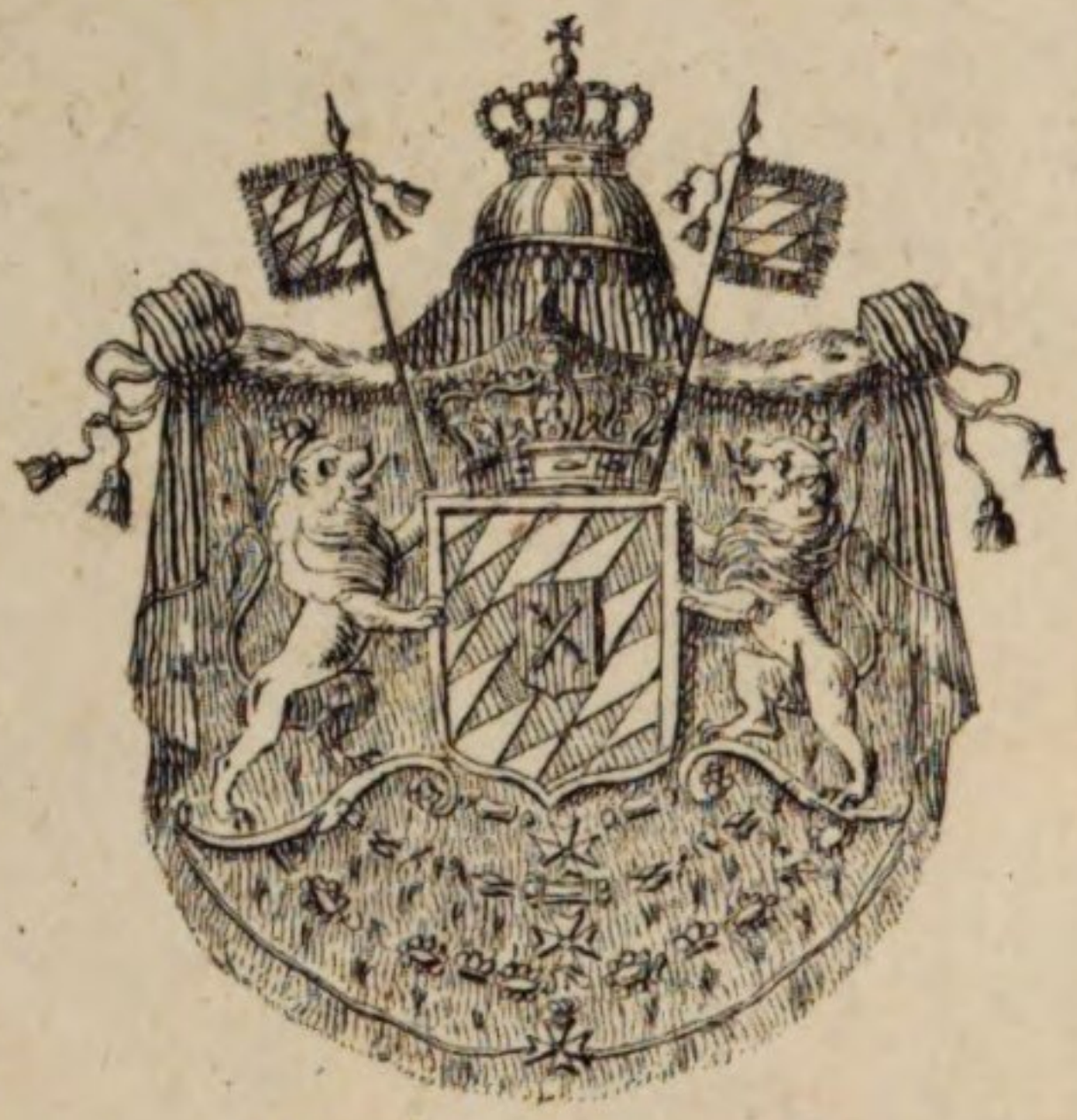
L. O. Angl
63. 1/1



BIBLIOTHECA REGIA MONACENSIS.

v. Watt Bibl. Britan. 550 z.

CHRYSAL:

OR,

THE ADVENTURES OF

A GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited Views of

SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES;

WITH

INTERESTING ANECDOTES,

Of the moſt noted Perſons in every Rank of Life,

Through whoſe Hands it has paſſed.

BY AN ADEPT.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

---------Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To ſhew Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times,
His Form and Preſſure. Shakeſpeare.

VOL. I.

Cooke's Edition.

EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

London:
Printed for C. COOKE, No. 17, Paternoſter-Row
And ſold by all the Bookſellers in
Great-Britain and
Ireland.

1 D

Bayerische
Staatsbibliothek
München

PREFACE.

BY THE PUBLISHER.

TO acquit myſelf of the ſuſpicion of preſuming to aim at particular characters in the following work, ſhould any fancied likeneſs be thought to direct an application; as well as to do juſtice to the real author of it; I think it my duty to make known the manner by which it happened to come into my hands.

As I was walking one morning, laſt ſummer, along Whitechapel, I was obliged to take ſhelter from a ſhower of rain in a cottage near the turnpike. The family were at breakfaſt, at their tea, and, as the rain continued, I had leiſure to reflect on the advantages of commerce, which thus, in a manner, joins the oppoſite extremities of the earth, by bringing their products together: at the ſame time, that the variety in the equipage of the tea-table, or indeed ſtool, on which 'there was nothing of 'a piece,' ſuggeſted a juſt ridicule on the vanity of luxury.

This laſt reflection was extended to all the purſuits of man, on the ſight of a piece of written paper, that ſerved inſtead of a plate to hold their butter.—'Who knows,' thought I, 'but the writer of this beſtowed time and 'care upon it, and promiſed himſelf both profit and fame, 'in reward of his labour?'

This thought raiſed a curioſity to look at the paper, which, by this time, was ſcraped quite clean. I therefore, after a few words of converſation, to introduce my requeſt, deſired leave to ſee it, which was readily granted, when I was ſurpriſed to find my conjecture, as I imagined, confirmed, by its appearing to be part of ſome regular work.

Curioſity had now a ſtronger motive than idle gratification! I aſked where they had got that paper; and on their

their telling me at the chandler's ſhop next door, though this diſcouraged me a good deal, I reſolved to purſue my inquiry, and went to the ſhop, as if for ſome ſnuff, which, as I expected, was given me on a piece of the ſame paper.

The rain ſtill giving me a pretence for delaying there, I entered into diſcourſe with the woman, and among other idle queſtions, aſked her where ſhe uſually got paper to wrap her wares in, to which ſhe anſwered,—
'Sometimes from the public offices, and ſometimes from
'the bookſellers and printers; and when ſhe was diſap-
'pointed at thoſe places, ſhe was forced to buy brown
'paper, which was much dearer; though at preſent, ſhe
'made uſe of ſome old *ſtuff* that had lain a great while
'lumbering her garret, having belonged to a lodger of
'her mother's, who died many years ago.'

I then changed the diſcourſe, for fear ſhe ſhould perceive my deſign; but preſently ſeeing her going to tear more, for ſomebody elſe that came in, I could not forbear any longer, but offered her brown paper for all the written paper ſhe had, *as that was moſt proper for ſome work I deſigned*, which ſhe readily agreed to, and ſold me her whole ſtock for eighteen-pence.

This adventure put an end to my walk, ſo I took the firſt coach that went by, and hurried home to examine my purchaſe, which I found to conſiſt of a number of fragments, upon various ſubjects, whether originally left unfiniſhed, or torn thus in the chandler's ſhop, it was impoſſible to ſay: and, among the reſt, the following work, which ſeemed to have undergone a different, though not much better fate, being blotted in many places, often paragraphs, and ſometimes whole pages, being eraſed; and, what was worſt, this havoc was made in the moſt curious and entertaining part of the whole, the *philoſophy of the nature and agency of ſpirits*.

The oddity of this collection, made me reſolve to try if I could learn any thing of the author from the woman

of

of the ſhop, where I had made my purchaſe; accordingly I called upon her one evening, as if merely by accident, and ſending for a pint of wine, to ſet her tongue a going, I no ſooner hinted my deſire, than ſhe directly gave me the following account, which I ſhall repeat as nearly as poſſible, in her own words, ſhortening it only of expletive exclamations and repetitions.

'My father,' ſaid ſhe, 'dying young, and leaving 'his family but poorly, my mother took this ſhop to 'help her to bring up three children, of whom I, the 'eldeſt, was but five years old. The times being hard, 'ſhe was obliged to make every honeſt ſhift, and there-'fore took in lodgers, and, among the reſt, an elderly 'man, who rented the garret to ſleep in, and a little 'turret in the garden, which he fitted up for himſelf for 'a workſhop; but what buſineſs he followed ſhe never 'knew, as he let nobody ſee him at work; nor did ſhe 'trouble herſelf to inquire, as he always paid her punc-'tually: but ſhe imagined he was a ſmith of ſome ſort, 'from the quantities of charcoal he burned, and the con-'ſtant blowing of his bellows.

'In this place he ſpent all his time, often not quitting 'it for whole days and nights together, till hunger has 'forced him to crawl like a ſtarved rat out of his hole, 'to get a bit of victuals.

'At firſt my mother was uneaſy at this, and imagin-'ing he muſt be *out of his mind*, or troubled in conſci-'ence, ſhe ſpoke about him to a worthy gentleman, a 'clergyman, that lived in the neighbourhood; but he 'coming to ſee him at a time when he had a clean ſhirt 'on, and had eat his victuals, and ſlept regularly for 'ſome time before, his diſcourſe was ſo ſenſible and 'pleaſant, that the doctor could not help telling him the 'cauſe of his viſit as a joke at my mother, to whom he 'ſaid, when he was going away, that, ſo far from being 'mad, he believed her lodger was the beſt ſcholar in the 'whole pariſh.

'My mother's good nature had like to have loſt her 'her lodger, for, as ſoon as the doctor was gone, he 'gave her warning, but upon her promiſing never to be 'guilty of the like indiſcretion again, nor to trouble 'herſelf any farther about him, than juſt to give him 'what he ſhould call for, he conſented to ſtay.

'From that time he lived among us as unnoticed as 'he could deſire, following his buſineſs without diſturb-'ance from any one, nor appearing to give himſelf the 'leaſt trouble about that of any other perſon living, ex-'cept it was me, whom he taught to read, and ſaid he 'would make his heir. An unhappy heirſhip, I am 'ſure, for me; for it hindered my marrying Jack Twiſt 'the rope-maker, who is the toppingeſt man in all 'Radcliff-highway, and then offered to take me in my 'ſhift.

'But there's no help for that now! Luck is all! to 'be ſure we thought he muſt be ſome extraordinary 'man, for he never wanted money, and then we uſed to 'hear him talk to himſelf ſometimes, as if all the world 'was his own, of *building colleges, and churches, and 'houſes, and altering St. Paul's*, and I do not know 'what great things; and one day in particular, I re-'member he ſaid before us all, that before ſeven years, 'he would hire an army, that ſhould drive the *Pope* and 'the *Devil* (Lord bleſs us) out of *Rome*; for to be ſure, 'he would talk before us, as if we could not hear him, 'as we would alſo do any thing before him as freely as 'if he was a cat or a dog! Well, as I was ſaying, it 'was no wonder, to be ſure, that ſuch ignorant poor 'folks as we, ſhould think much of him, eſpecially after 'what the doctor ſaid, and accordingly built great hopes 'upon his promiſes.

'He went on thus for near twenty years, no ſoul ever 'coming near him, nor he going out above once or twice 'in a year, and then not ſtaying above an hour or two 'at a time.

'At

'At length his health began to break very much,
'which made my mother often ſpeak to him, not to work
'ſo hard, for he had been with us ſo long, and was ſo
'quiet, and paid ſo honeſtly, that we all loved him as
'if he was our father. But her advice was all to no
'purpoſe; he ſtill went on, bidding her not trouble
'herſelf, nor be afraid about him. But this did not
'ſatisfy her; and one day, when he had been locked up
'from the morning before, without having any victuals
'or going to bed, ſhe reſolved to break through his or-
'ders and call him to dinner.

'When ſhe came to the turret, which he called his
'*laboratory*, ſhe tapped gently at the door; but receiving
'no anſwer, nor hearing any noiſe within, ſhe was ſo
'frighted, that ſhe called me to fetch the kitchen poker,
'with which we made a ſhift to force it open, when we
'found the poor man ſtretched at his length upon the
'floor, to all appearance dead.

'This ſhocked us greatly; but we did not alarm the
'neighbours, as we imagined there were things of value
'there, that might be miſplaced, or taken away in the
'confuſion: we therefore raiſed him up ourſelves, and
'after a little while, perceiving ſigns of life, carried him
'in, and laid him in our own bed, and, pouring ſome
'drops into his mouth and noſe, at length brought him
'to himſelf; when his firſt care was to inquire for the
'key of the turret, whether any one elſe had been there,
'nor any thing in it ſtirred: our anſwers ſatisfying him,
'he ſeemed quite eaſy, and in a little time recovered, to
'all appearance as well as ever.

'From this time, he changed his way of life a good
'deal; and though he was much in the turret, which
'we obſerved he ever after called his *ſtudy*, and not his
'*laboratory*, he never ſat up whole nights in it, as before,
'nor bought any more charcoal, nor even oil for his
'lamp, but went to bed orderly when we did.

'But

'But this change came too late; for about ſix months 'after, we found him one morning dead in his bed; 'though he had been as cheary in the evening before, as 'he had for a long time.

'This was a great ſurpriſe and concern to us! But 'what avails grief? We muſt all die, and he was a 'very old man. As ſoon as we were certain that he 'was dead, the firſt thing my mother and I did, was 'to go to the turret, impatient enough to take poſſeſſion of 'our heirſhip; where, Lord help our poor heads! did 'we find only a few great old books, and thoſe papers 'you got; the very bellows and tools, and pots that we 'ſaw there before, being all gone, and no more ſign of 'a workſhop to be ſeen, than if it was not the ſame place 'we had been in ſix months before. What he could have 'done with his things we could not imagine, for we 'never obſerved him to carry them out, ſo that we con-'cluded he muſt have burned them.

'This was a ſore diſappointment to me, not to men-'tion the loſs to my mother, to whom he owed a quar-'ter's rent, beſides an account of near twenty ſhillings 'in the ſhop; and ſeven ſhillings and two-pence half-'penny was all the money in his pocket, nor did we 'ever find one penny more after him, though we ſearched 'cloſe enough!——Well! patience is a remedy for all 'things but death; we were forced to ſubmit; though 'I cannot help grieving when I think of it, to this day, 'eſpecially when I ſee Peg Sprout, the green-woman's 'daughter from Wapping, that Jack Twiſt married out 'of deſpair, when I refuſed him, ride by in her chaiſe, 'like a lady; and it is now thirty years ago!——No! 'let me ſee! it will be exactly twenty-nine years come 'next Michaelmas; I am ſure I have reaſon to remember 'it well, for my poor mother took it ſo to heart that ſhe 'never held up her head after, till it finiſhed her, in 'about nine years; though I cannot ſay but ſomething

'elſe

'else might have helped, for she took cruelly to drink-
'ing drams, though as she began it to comfort her for
'this misfortune, it was all owing to that; that poor
'sister Bet, too.'——

I was obliged to interrupt her here, by asking her, what kind of a person he was, or she would have gone on to give me the history of her whole family.

My curiosity being thus satisfied as to the author, there was but one thing more that I desired to know, and that was, how those papers came to have so many blots made in them, which by the difference of ink, I could see was done long since the first writing? To which she answered, that, some time after the old man's death, her mother let his apartment to one that called himself a clergyman, and was a great scholar, and used to make almanacks, and other books; that he had looked over those papers, and she believed, taken out such as he liked, and done what he pleased with the rest, for they set no regard on them; and particularly she remembered to have heard him say, that he would make something of one of them; but she believed he found it would not do, for he soon after left their house, and joining with those methodists that were just then come up, went away with them, preaching about the country.

I thought it but reasonable to reward the good woman's expence of breath, with half a crown, and so took my leave, though with a secret resolution to give her half the profit, if there arises any, from the sale of the books; not thinking that such a purchase, as I had made from an ignorant woman, could give me a just title to the whole *heirship*, as she called it, that had cost her so dear as the loss of her old sweetheart Jack Twist.

This good woman's account explained to me, in some measure, the nature of this work, for the circumstances of the author, who, I could see, had been a schemer, who had wasted his whole fortune, in the search after the

the *philoſopher's ſtone*, and having his eyes at length opened to his folly, though too late to remedy it, yet was able to divert the grief of his diſappointment, by writing theſe papers, in ridicule of ſuch notions, and from the ſale of which he might alſo expect ſome relief to his wants.

But, whatever the motive was, the loſs is now irreparable, and has reduced the work to the appearance of a novel or romance, almoſt the whole philoſophical part having been eraſed; for, as to the perſonal application of any thing in it to the preſent times, the leaſt attention to this account of the author will ſhew the abſurdity and injuſtice of ſuch an attempt; as it was wrote ſo long ago, and by a perſon ſo little acquainted with the world, that all the ſtories in it muſt neceſſarily be the mere creatures of imagination.

For the manner in which they are publiſhed I ſhall only ſay, that it is ſtrictly agreeable to the faith of the text; not one of the many alterations and interpolations, which were in another hand, being given; but wherever I could not clearly make out the very words of the author, I honeſtly omitted the whole, not thinking it allowable or juſt, to palm my own words or ſentiments upon the world, or the credit of another.

How ſcrupulous I have been in this point, will appear to any one, who ſhall take the pains of conſulting the original manuſcript, which ſhall be depoſited in the public library of one of the univerſities, as ſoon as the work is printed. The only liberty I have taken, being in a few notes in the margin, and ſuppiying a connexion, where it was broken by any of the above-mentioned accidents.

CHRYSAL:

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

The apparition of CHRYSAL *to an Adept, in the very moment of projection. His account of himself, and the cause of his appearing to the author.*

ON a day, when long and strict abstinence had purified my body from every *terrene* incumbrance, and intense contemplation wound up my mind to an enthusiasm fit for *empyreal* conversation, as I stood with my eyes riveted on the *obstetric* flame, in strong expectation of the birth of the *mystic child, the first-born of the morning*, ready to seize the happy moment, *when the earth sufficiently impregnated with the water, ascendeth white and splendent, that I might compound the pure elements, before they fly from the fire, and so perfect the great work*; my eyes began to dazzle, and the power of imagination overwhelmed my soul. I saw a blue effulgence break from the liquid gold, and play about the genial vase!—I was astonished! I thought it the *substantial form of the son of the sun!* I thought the happy moment was come, when *the rose of the east should bloom in the desart*, and mine the favourite hand to cultivate its growth! I indulged the pleasing thought! I melted in the virtuous joy! and, in obedience to the divine impulse, I kneeled to receive the reward of all my labours, *the radiant crown of wisdom and glory*, from the hand of nature, with every sense and faculty suspended, for fear of interrupting the mysterious process.

As my soul hung in this ecstasy, the flame which wrapped the *sacred birth in the bed of purification*, arose with the glory too strong for mortal sense, and filled the room. My senses sunk under the pressure, and I was dissolved into a trance, when a voice, celestially harmonious, encouraged me to raise my eyes, and I

beheld

beheld *the body of the effulgence condenſe into an incorporeal ſubſtance in the form of a ſpirit*, while a placid ſhade ſoftened the fierceneſs of the radiance, and made it tolerable to human ſenſe.

An holy horror curdled all my blood; but the melody of the ſame voice, which had before emboldened me to look up, re-aſſured my fainting heart with theſe words: 'Son of pains and votary of ſcience! thy unwearied perſeverance has prevailed, and I am ſent to crown thee with a virgin roſe! I am CHRYSAL*, the ſpirit of that incorruptible maſs now glowing in that vaſe before thee, who in reward of thy noble conſtancy in offering this thy laſt mite, on the ſhrine of knowledge, am come to reveal to thee the myſteries of nature, and ſatisfy that raging thirſt for wiſdom which has ſo long excruciated thy ſoul, and thus emaciated thy body! And that thou mayeſt the better comprehend the greatneſs of this honour vouchſafed unto thee, I ſhall trace the operations of nature through her moſt ſecret receſſes, and illuſtrate the truth of what I ſay, by a detail of the various incidents of my being, in my preſent ſtate, to prepare thee for the reception and proper uſe of the *grand ſecret*, which I ſhall afterwards communicate!

'I can ſee your thoughts; and will anſwer every doubt which may ariſe in your mind at the wonders of my relation without the interruption of your inquiries, as *awful ſilence is the eſſence of my converſe*, the leaſt breach of which puts an end to it for ever! liſten then in mute attention, nor let a breath diſturb the myſtic tale!'—

The works of nature are infinitely various, and her methods of operation inſcrutable to the curioſity of that vain intruder, *Reaſon*, which has of late preſumed to pry into her ways, and to doubt, if not deny, the reality of all effects, which her ſhort-ſighted eye cannot trace

* This name is evidently derived from Χρυσὸς *Gold*, and may probably ſignify *Golden*, from her animating a piece of *Gold*; for, by the univerſal authority of the *occult* philoſophy, ſpirits ar always denominated from their office. to

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.
The Adept entranced by the Apparition
of Chrysal, in his Laboratory.
Vide Vol. I. Chapter 1. page 12.
Drawn by E. Burney. Engraved by R. Rhodes.

to their cauſes! a preſumption that has juſtly ſhortened the line of human knowledge, and condenſed the miſt of ignorance which overſpreads the world! Some noble efforts though I ſee the nature of man preparing to make, to recover that eminence of *conjecture* and *credulity* which alone can merit ſuch a communication of extraordinary knowledge as is now indulged to you. Some of the moſt hidden truths which I ſhall here unfold, has unaſſiſted genius diſcovered already; and more ſhall curious penetration make learned gueſſes at, even in this ſceptic age*.

Know then, that in the œconomy of nature, to eaſe the trouble, and keep up the ſtate of its great author†, *a ſubordination of miniſterial ſpirits execute the ſyſtem of his government in all its degrees; one of whom, for the greater order and expedition, is made to actuate every divided particle of matter in this immenſe univerſe.* In this diſtribution, *that* portion of gold was aſſigned to my charge, upon its firſt feeling the influence of the ‡*etherial fire of the ſun, the general miniſter of the divine commands.* This happened in Peru, where that body of which I then became the ſpirit, was torn from its peaceful bed, two hundred fathoms deep in the bowels of the earth.

I ſhall not deſcribe my ſurpriſe, at my firſt plunging into thoſe realms of darkneſs, nor ſhall I ſatisfy the curioſity I ſee riſing in you, whether that period was the beginning of my exiſtence; or whether I was, either as a puniſhment, or reward for a paſt, or a preparation for a future life, thrown into this. Theſe are myſteries not yet diſcovered, though often moſt learnedly gueſſed at.—All I ſhall unfold to you are points already known, or ſuch as I ſee ready to be found out by human induſtry, as it would put an end to learning to make a revelation of

* See all the modern hypothetical philoſophy.

† Eſſay on ſpirit. ‡ Siris.

Would not theſe, and many other paſſages of the ſame nature which ſupport the ſyſtems of thoſe celebrated works, almoſt tempt us to think that the writers of them muſt have had a communication with this or ſome ſuch ſpirit, to come at knowledge ſo ſupernatural.

of the objects of its inquiries! Such matters, I say, I shall explain to you, and farther relate some occurrences, the knowledge of which will be equally useful and entertaining, which happened to the several persons with whom I have had intercourse, in the various stages of my present state.

And as you may be at a loss, to know how I could arrive at the knowledge of such facts, many of which happened long before my converse with those persons, I shall inform you, that besides that *intuitive knowledge* common to all spirits, we of superior orders, who animate this universal monarch GOLD, have also a power of entering into the hearts of the immediate possessors of our bodies, and there reading all the secrets of their lives. And this will explain to you the cause of that love of gold, which is so remarkable in all who possess any quantity of that metal. * *For the operation of every material is in proportion to the strength of the spirit actuating that cause*; *as the strength of the spirit is reciprocally in proportion to the quantity of his material body*: and consequently, when the mighty spirit of a large mass of gold takes possession of the human heart, it influences all its actions, and overpowers, or banishes, the weaker impulse of those immaterial, unessential notions called *virtues*. And this intuition, and power of transmigration, I have thus explained, to remove every shadow of doubt of what I shall relate.

CHAP. II.

Chrysal 'gives an account of the person who dug up his body in the mine. The particular manner of his acquiring the knowledge of his life, with an explanation of the nature of memory and consciousness.

THE first object that struck me, when I darted on the power of a sun-beam, into those infernal regions where my body was just dug up, was the person in whose hands it was when I took possession of it.

Dark as the gloom of such a place must be, a melancholy that doubled all the horrors of it, sat upon his brow.

* Essay on Spirit. He

He gazed a moment on *me*,* in ſilent grief, and then groaned out theſe words with a vehemence that ſeemed to burſt his heart; 'Damned, damned, pernicious, damn-'ing gold! how dearly do I purchaſe this momentary 'poſſeſſion of thee! But let me acknowledge the juſtice 'of my fate! I wiſhed only for gold, and now, this 'equivocal grant of that wiſh, is the juſt puniſhment of 'the folly, and the wickedneſs of it.'—Grief here choaked his utterance! he could ſay no more, but ſobbed aloud, while all the dreary caverns echoed to his anguiſh.

Curioſity prompted me to learn the cauſe of his diſtreſs: I therefore immediately entered into his heart, to read the events of his life, which I doubted not but I ſhould find deeply imprinted there: But I was ſurpriſed to find that room in it, which, I could plainly ſee had been poſ-ſeſſed by the love of gold, ſo filled with ſenſe of pain, with grief and remorſe, that I could ſcarce gain admiſſion.

Upon this I mounted into the *ſenſorium* of his brain, to learn from the ſpirit of conſciouſneſs, which you call SELF, the cauſe of ſo uncommon a change, as it is contrary to the fundamental rules of our order, even to give up a heart of which we once get poſſeſſion.

I found the ſpirit very buſy, though I thought ſomewhat oddly employed: ſhe was running over a number of *niches*, or impreſſions, on the fibres of the brain, ſome of which I obſerved ſhe renewed with ſuch force, that ſhe almoſt effaced others, which ſhe paſſed over untouched, though interſperſed among them. The ſight of *me* ſeemed to ſuſpend her works a moment; but as if that pauſe was only to recover ſtrength, ſhe inſtantly renewed her labour with great aſſiduity. I *looked at her*, my deſire to know the meaning of what ſhe was doing, and to ſignify the cauſe of my viſit, to which ſhe returned me this anſwer, in *a glance* that interrupted not her work.

(I ſee you wonder, that I ſpeak of this ſpirit, though the SELF of a man, as if it was a female; but in this

* *Chryſal* muſt here mean the *Gold* which now became her body, as ſhe does not ſay that ſhe appeared in the ſpirit to any one before the author.

there is a myſtery, *every ſpirit is of both ſexes*, but as the female is the worthier with us, we take our denomination from that.)

You are ſurpriſed, *looked ſhe*, to find me ſo earneſtly engaged in work which you do not underſtand; but *in this work conſiſts my very eſſence. This place where we are, is the ſeat of memory; and theſe traces which you ſee me running over thus, are the impreſſions made on the brain by a communication of the impreſſions made on the ſenſes by external objects.*——*Theſe firſt impreſſions are called* IDEAS, *which are lodged in this repoſitory of the memory in theſe marks, by running which over, I can raiſe the ſame* ideas *when I pleaſe, which differ from their firſt appearance only in this, that, on their return, they come with the familiarity of a former acquaintance.**

How this communication is made, I cannot, however, ſo well inform you; whether it is by the *oſcillation of the nervous fibres*, or by the *operation of a certain inviſible fluid*, called *animal ſpirits, on the nerves*; no more than I can explain to you how my touching theſe marks, on this material ſubſtance the brain, can raiſe *ideas* in the immaterial mind, and with the addition of acquaintance beſide; for theſe are matters not yet ſettled among the learned.

All I know is, that the thing is agreed to be ſo, by ſome, or other, or all of theſe means, and that my whole employment, and end of being, is to touch them over, and acknowledge their acquaintance thus; without my doing which, a man would no longer continue the ſame perſon, for in this acquaintance, which is called *conſciouſneſs*, does all perſonal identity conſiſt.†

As for the work I am juſt now particularly engaged in, you muſt know that this man, whom, as I am *his ſelf*, I ſhall henceforth, for conciſeneſs and perſpicuity, call *my ſelf*, was once poſſeſſed of, or in power of poſſeſſing every real happineſs of life, till an inſatiable deſire of riches hurried him into meaſures which overturned all that happineſs, and in the end plunged him into this gulph of miſery.

The

* See all the modern philoſophy. † Locke.

The traces of that happineſs are thoſe which you ſee me paſs over without renewing; by which means he forgets that he was ever happy, except ſometimes, when the trace of any particular unhappineſs comes ſo near that of any inſtance of happineſs, as unavoidably to touch it; which touch, by the renewal of the idea of ſuch happineſs, only aggravates the ſenſe of the preſent want of it. And thus *I* make memory either a bleſſing or a curſe, according to the nature of the trace which *I renew*.

I ſee you are aſtoniſhed, how a perſon who was ever happy, could poſſibly fall into ſuch miſery as I am now in; but I ſhall remove that aſtoniſhment, by the hiſtory of *my* life, in which I ſhall accommodate my account of places and things to the circumſtances of my preſent ſtate, without regard to the univerſality of *our* ſpiritual nature: and call them by their names among men, without the delay or trouble of deſcription.

CHAP. III.

The hiſtory of Traffic. His father's advice to him; containing ſome general obſervations on the nature and end of trade; with rules to inſure a ſucceſs in it.

MY name is Traffic; I was the only ſon of a wealthy merchant in London, who bred me to his own buſineſs. There was nothing remarkable in my youth, except that the characteriſtic paſſion of my heart, ſhewed itſelf, in the very dawn of reaſon, in my eagerneſs to engroſs and hoard up the baubles of my play-mates, and the far fetched ſchemes I laid to over-reach them in all our little bargains.

My father was at firſt delighted with this cunning, which his fondneſs took for the firſt eſſay of a great genius; but, when he ſaw me perſiſt in it after I grew up, and attempt to practiſe the ſame arts, in the courſe of my buſineſs, it gave him ſerious alarms for my future conduct; for he had ever been averſe to theſe artifices, which are called *the myſteries of commerce*, and owed his ſucceſs ſolely to cloſe application in the plain way of a fair trader.

But this caution I looked upon with contempt, as timidity and want of genius, and, undiſcouraged by his conſtant repulſes to all my *bold ſtrokes* and deep ſchemes, which I was continually ſuggeſting to him, I reſolved, when I ſhould be at liberty, to indulge my own inclinations to ſtrike out new ways, that ſhould afford me opportunities of exerting my abilities in their full ſtrength, and ſhewing them in their proper luſtre.

The vanity which prompted avarice to form theſe deſigns, would ſo often break out in boaſting, that my father was fully acquainted with them; and, a ſenſible decline in his health quickening his apprehenſions for me, his tenderneſs would omit nothing which might ſhew me my error, in its proper light, and prevent my falling into ſo deſtructive ways.

Calling me therefore into his cloſet, one morning, he addreſſed me in theſe words; words which dear experience has now printed deeply on my heart, though then they had no weight with me.

'My ſon,' ſaid he, 'the day approaches faſt, when 'you will be in poſſeſſion of the fruits of my honeſt in-'duſtry. I leave you a good fortune; and have the 'happineſs to be able to tell you, in this trying moment, 'that no wilful private wrong, or public fraud, makes 'me wiſh it were by one penny leſs. As therefore it 'was acquired in the fear of God, if not abuſed, it will 'wear with his bleſſing. Habit had ſo wedded me to 'my buſineſs that I could not leave it off myſelf; and I 'bred you to it, to indulge, as I thought, the bent of 'your genius, and to prevent idleneſs from tempting 'youth to folly——But now, that dangerous ſeaſon is 'paſt with you; and the labour of my life has taken 'away all neceſſity of labour from yours. Be wiſe ther, 'my ſon, and enjoy that happineſs which Heaven offers 'you, without tempting a reverſe! You will have riches, 'more than enough, for every natural want, for every 'rational wiſh; and it will ſweeten your enjoyment of 'them, and draw down the bleſſings of Heaven on your 'head, to employ the ſuper-plus in acts of private bene-

'volence

'volence and public ſpirit; in which beſt of employ-
'ments, the abilities, with which you are ſo liberally
'bleſt, will find ample room for their exertion; and
'your pious endeavours be rewarded with a ſucceſs, that
'will be an happineſs to your life, and an honour to
'your name.

'As for the profeſſion of a merchant, to which you
'have been bred, heaven points it out to the inhabitants
'of this country, by our ſituation, nor can any other be
'more advantageous to it; but ſtill, even that advan-
'tage may be purſued too far, and the extreme of in-
'duſtry may ſink into avarice, and ſo diſappoint its
'own end.

'For I muſt tell you, my ſon, that though trade adds
'to the wealth, yet too eager a purſuit of it, even with
'the greateſt ſucceſs, diminiſhes the ſtrength of a na-
'tion. I am ſenſible, that this is againſt received opi-
'nion; but truth, when properly diſplayed, will force
'conviction.

'The real ſtrength of a nation conſiſts in the preva-
'lence of diſintereſted ſpirit, which, regardleſs of *ſelf*,
'throws its weight into the public fund; as may be
'proved by many examples of ſmall poor ſtates conquer-
'ing large wealthy ones. Whereas the ſpirit of com-
'merce centres all in *ſelf*, diſcouraging and deſpiſing,
'as folly, every thought which does not tend that way;
'and ſo breaking that unanimity, which is the very eſ-
'ſence of power, and only can give it ſucceſs. A re-
'flection this, my ſon, which obſervation confirms too
'ſtrongly at preſent, and which ſeems to overcaſt the
'proſpect of this happy nation.

'My advice therefore to you is, to retire from buſi-
'neſs, though not to idleneſs. You will have a fortune
'that will make you of conſequence in the ſtate, and
'give you ſufficient employment in the conduct of it,
'without embarraſſing your mind with anxiety for more.
'And, to enable you to follow this advice with the
'greateſt eaſe, I have ſettled all my affairs, and ſhall
'leave you free from every entanglement of life. This

is

'is the advice; the requeſt of a fond father, who deſires 'compliance from his dear ſon, and would not force 'unwilling obedience, by an act of authority or com-'mand. But ſhould the love of buſineſs have taken ſuch 'a hold of your heart, as habit gave it of mine, and 'not permit you to comply with this requeſt, take, my 'ſon, the advice of experience, and hold faſt the clue it 'offers to guide you through the labyrinths of trade, in 'which the vivacity of your genius may, otherwiſe, loſe 'its way. Nor are the rules I ſhall hint to you, many 'to be remembered, or difficult to be obſerved.

'*Be juſt, my ſon, in all your dealings; wrong not in-*'*dividuals; nor defraud the public.*

'These are all the rules I recommend; but in them 'is comprized more than, perhaps, appears at firſt view. 'Do not, therefore, think them too obvious to have been 'neceſſary to be repeated! nor let the mention of them 'give offence, by any ſeeming implication of perſonal 'doubt.

'In the buſineſs of a merchant, theſe rules compre-'hend a great extent of meaning, though I ſhall men-'tion but a few inſtances of it at preſent.

'As for the firſt, every miſrepreſentation to miſlead 'ignorance, or abuſe credulity, every taking advantage 'by ſuperior knowledge, is a wrong to the party ſo de-'ceived; as every artifice to evade the intention of the 'legiſlature is a fraud againſt the public, nay againſt 'yourſelf, and every individual who claims the benefits 'provided by the ordinances, ſo defeated of their ſup-'port.

'This indeed is ſo obvious, that it were an affront to 'reaſon to inſiſt on any proof of it. The moſt eager 'purſuer of illicit trade will not vindicate a general in-'dulgence of it; and if it is not lawful for all, how can 'it be for him? or with what colour can he claim a pro-'fit, which he is conſcious ariſes only from deceit, and 'from the benefit of thoſe very laws which he thus de-'feats?

'The temptations to this breach of honeſty, I own,

'are

'are many and great, and ſome of them perhaps plau-
'ſible; particularly in thoſe branches of trade which
'ſeem to bear a more than equal ſhare of the weight im-
'poſed for general advantage. But, in oppoſition to
'this, it muſt be conſidered, that it is impoſſible to pro-
'vide ſo exactly for a thing of ſo fluctuating a nature as
'trade, that the balance ſhall not incline, in ſome one
'inſtance; and that it muſt, by the ſame motion which
'oppreſſes one, be favourable to ſome other; and ſo pre-
'ſerve the equipoiſe in the whole; and this obviates the
'only ſhadow of an argument, that can be brought in-
'defence of this too common practice.

'As for the former, of avoiding private wrong, that
'is more difficult, and leſs defencible, if poſſible, than
'even this. For where all the powers of the mind are
'turned to *make* advantage, it is very hard to refrain
'from *taking* it, where we ought not, and bringing the
'great buſineſs of life into common practice, in its mi-
'nuteſt concerns.

'The man whoſe ſoul is on the ſtretch to take advan-
'tage, in a bargain for thouſands, on the Exchange,
'will be apt perhaps inſenſibly to overlook an error that
'is not to his diſadvantage, in a tradeſman's bill, or to
'take no notice of a guinea given inſtead of a ſhilling in
'change at a tavern, though either is as great diſho-
'neſty, as if he took them in a manner puniſhable with
'death by the laws: not to mention the innumerable
'little inſtances of temptation to this kind of wrong,
'which occur in every moment's dealing. *That we may*
'*avoid temptation*, is one of the petitions of the Divine
'prayer, and never more neceſſary to be offered up than
'in this profeſſion, whoſe conſtant practice opens innu-
'merable inſtances of it upon us.

'In a word, my ſon, there are ſo many and ſtrong
'arguments of this nature to be given againſt all trade,
'that the general advantage of the common-wealth alone
'can, in any way, ſupport it againſt them. This
'therefore ſhould be written in the deepeſt characters,
'on the heart of every merchant, *that he ſhould never let*

'*private*

'*private interest tempt him to engage in any trade or*
'*scheme that can interfere with the public interest, or is*
'*forbidden by the laws of his country.*——I shall say no
'more; nor burthen your mind with farther advice.—
'Observe this, and be happy.'

I was obliged to hear him: but his words, at that time, made no more impression on my mind, than the whistling of the winds, nor in the least altered my intentions; though I felt no scruple in promising obedience, the breach of which could never be upbraided to me, as I could not think of practising it, before his death should remove the only person who had such an authority.

CHAP. IV.

The history of Traffic continued: His father's death. He continues in trade, and turns schemer. His various schemes end in his ruin. The rise and progress of his passion for Amelia. The base abuse of her confidence, by which he cheated her of the greatest part of her fortune, and afterwards formed dishonourable designs against herself.

THE opportunity which I had long panted for, arrived too soon: my father dying, just after I was of age, and leaving me possessed of wealth sufficient for me to exercise my talents on, as I was not blessed with prudence to take his advice, and put it to its proper use in rational enjoyment.

I was immediately a man of consequence, and that not only in my own eyes. I made a figure upon Change; I signed among the foremost in the public subscriptions. But all this did not satisfy me. I sickened at the thought of having an equal, not only in wealth, the darling object of my soul, but also in the reputation of acquiring it by methods of my own *striking out*, as I looked upon the known course of business as too slow for my advances, and too limited for my genius.

I therefore immediately became a *Schemer*, and entered into every project which my own brain could invent, or artful imposition suggest to me; blindly, wilfully, giving up the serenity of an open mind, for the vain appearance

pearance of myſterious conſequence and deſign; and making my fortune a prey to every ſharking projector, who flattered my vanity with promiſes of ſucceſs, in the very attempts which had been his own ruin.

The perplexity in which this infatuation ſoon involved my affairs, far from opening my eyes, only ſet me upon deeper ſchemes. *Sporting* upon private adventures, *taking in* unwary confidence, *flinging* the fair trader, by eluding the reſtrictions of law, were now too ſmall a game for me: I was entangled, and muſt cut the *Gordian knot* by ſome bold ſtroke.

I therefore threw off all reſtraint, and entered into meaſures the moſt injurious to my country, which was then engaged in a juſt and extenſive war. I inſured the effects of its enemies, and of conſequence gave them information how to avoid its forces: I carried on their trade with other countries; I ſupplied them with proviſions from ours; and at length went ſo far as to lend and procure them money to ſupport the war againſt ourſelves.

But all my ſchemes met their juſt fate. Though I could give their ſhips information how to avoid our ſquadrons, yet they fell into the hands of *unſtationed* privateers. My ſubterfuges for carrying on their trade were ſeen through, and a ſtop put to them before I could receive the ſtipulated profit. The ſtores I bought for them were intercepted by our fleets, and, to conclude all, the enemy, by one ſtretch of arbitrary power, refuſed to pay any debts, and appropriated the funds provided for that purpoſe to the preſent ſupport of the war.

This finiſhed my ruin: I had not only lent them all my own fortune, but had alſo borrowed much more to ſupply them, (on confidence in their promiſes,) than I was now able to pay.

In this ſituation, the advice of my father returned full upon me, and aggravated my diſtreſs. But I had no time for reflection; the horrors of a jail ſtared me full in the face, which I had no way to avoid but by flight, the equivocalneſs of my character having made every honeſt man, who was able to aſſiſt me, afraid of being

concerned

concerned with me. I therefore immediately raiſed all the money I poſſibly could, and embarked ſecretly in a ſhip of my own for Jamaica; heaven, to make its juſtice the more ſignal, uſing my blackeſt guilt as a chain to draw me to the vengeance I deſerved.

I muſt ſtop here, and look back, to give you an account of an affair, which the precipitancy of my ruin prevented my mentioning in its proper order.

Much as ſuch a complicated ſcene as I have deſcribed, muſt have taken up my time and engroſſed my thoughts, I had ſtill found leiſure for guilt of another nature, though ultimately ſpringing from the ſame cauſe.

I had told you, that my father had acquired his own fortune by induſtry; but as the greateſt induſtry requires a foundation to work upon, his had been aſſiſted by the perſon to whom he ſerved his apprenticeſhip, who knowing his abilities, and confiding in his honeſty, upon the decline of his own health, eſtabliſhed him in partnerſhip with his only ſon, whom he thought too young to conduct ſo extenſive a buſineſs.

My father faithfully executed this great truſt, and continued the partnerſhip, till his obſervation of my unfortunate diſpoſition determined him to make me quit trade; when it was diſſolved, without the leaſt breach in that real friendſhip which had ſo long ſubſiſted between them. Though I did not obey my father's deſire, yet my vanity would not admit a thought of recommencing the partnerſhip, as it would have been but a curb on my favourite *ſchemes*, and have implied a want of aſſiſtance, which, in my own opinion, I was far above. On the contrary, I rather declined too cloſe a connexion with him in buſineſs; as I feared he might have taken upon him to interpoſe his advice againſt any thing, which his *narrow*, *fearful* temper might diſapprove in my *great* deſigns; but as I kept up every other appearance of regard, and even reſpect for him, this ſhyneſs was not obſerved, nor any coolneſs occaſioned by it, in the intercourſe of intimacy between us.

But for this conduct I had another motive, beſides re-

gard for *him*. He had an only daughter, enriched with every beauty and virtue that could mark the favourite work of heaven: ſhe was about four years younger than me, which difference of age had given me an opportunity of treating her with ſuch a fondneſs, from her very infancy, as raiſed a real love in her grateful heart, as her beauties did the ſtrongeſt one it was capable of feeling in mine. Our fathers had ſeen this growing attachment, with the greateſt pleaſure, from the beginning, and encouraged it between us, (our mothers both died in our infancy) joining in the general opinion, that the union which had always been between their families would be completed by the intermarriage of their children: an opinion that was then my pride, and ſeemed a pleaſure to the young Amelia's honeſt heart, that was above diſguiſe.

But my father's death, before ſhe was of an age to undertake the cares of ſuch an awful ſtate, and a long illneſs of her father's after, during which her filial piety and love would not admit a thought of any thing that ſhould interfere with her tender regard for him, prevented my happineſs from being accompliſhed, while there was any obſtacle that could hinder my evil genius from defeating it.

At length, after languiſhing five years, her father died, without a moment's more immediate warning, having been on the Exchange that day as uſual.

In the tumult of this loſs, I was ſent for; and no will being found, for he unhappily had not imagined his end ſo near, nor made any ſettlement of his affairs, in the confidence of our attachment, Amelia gave every thing into my hands, and requeſted me to make up all her father's accounts, and conclude her dealings with the world.

This happened juſt as my *ſcheming* had begun to embarraſs my affairs. My heart, therefore, never proof to much temptation, yielded to ſuch an opportunity of recovering the loſſes of my folly at her expence, by *ſinking* the greateſt part of her fortune to my own uſe; never

conſidering that I might have the whole in a juſt and honourable way, enhanced with the greateſt bleſſing of herſelf.

To accompliſh this deſign, and prepare her for what was to follow, I pretended to Amelia, that I found many difficulties in her father's affairs; and having ſecreted as much as I thought proper, and could with ſafety, and deſtroyed every memorial that might detect me, for all which her unbounded confidence gave ample opportunity, I at length gave her in an account, with the ſtrongeſt expreſſions of concern, 'to find that what 'I had long apprehended was too true, and that her father's 'affairs were in a very bad ſituation; that I had however, 'with great difficulty, got together ſomewhat above ten 'thouſand pounds, and was convinced, that this per-'plexity in his affairs, was the occaſion of his long ill-'neſs, and had not left him ſpirit enough to enquire 'into them and make a will.'

This repreſentation had the effect I deſigned; Amelia's confidence in me would not admit a thought of my deceiving her; as pride, too powerful in the pureſt human heart, prevented her revealing her circumſtances to any one elſe, who might have attempted to diſprove what I ſaid; though indeed it was ſcarce natural to ſuſpect me of a deceit, that according to the opinion which then prevailed concerning Amelia and me, could only affect myſelf.

She therefore, with an appearance of ſurpriſe rather than doubt, or even concern, acquieſced, and ſigned a receipt in full, deſiring me to deſtroy all her father's books and papers, as they could be of no farther uſe to her.

This completed my deſign beyond a poſſibility of detection, and even raiſed a new one againſt the poor pittance I had left her, though it was not quite a fourth part of what was really her right: for I had now thrown off all thoughts of marriage with one *ſo far beneath me in fortune* looking upon it as a reproach of my wiſdom and knowledge of the world, to make any *bargain* in

which

which I ſhould not have the advantage: for what I had ſo baſely defrauded her of, I conſidered merely as an acquiſition of my ſuperior ſkill in buſineſs, and abſolutely my own, without any manner of obligation to the perſon from whom I had obtained it: not that I had loſt my *deſire* for the perſon, (the only degree of love my heart was capable of feeling) but the advantage I had it now in my hopes of obtaining over her made me look upon her, as a ſure prey to my pleaſure.

CHAP. V.

Continued. He cheats Amelia of the reſidue of her fortune, and marries another woman. Amelia ſues him at law, is caſt, and goes for Jamaica. He is ruined, and follows her.

THOUGH my whole life was one continued ſcene of villany, yet in all, there was a gradation, a regular deſcent from bad to worſe; each ſucceſsful crime opening new opportunities and ſuggeſting ſchemes which never entered into my thoughts before.

This was exactly my caſe with regard to Amelia. While ſhe was in poſſeſſion of her whole fortune, the higheſt wiſh of my heart was to marry her; but no ſooner had an unhappy accident given me an opportunity of defrauding her of far the greateſt part of it, than that reſpectful love immediately ſunk into looſe deſire, and my ſucceſs in my former ſchemes againſt her, ſet my thoughts at work to accompliſh the gratification of this paſſion, on my own baſe terms.

To bring this deſign to perfection, it was neceſſary that I ſhould get her fortune intirely into my power; which I accordingly formed ſchemes to accompliſh without delay; for the ſucceſs of my former attempt, ſo far from ſatisfying my avarice, or raiſing any ſenſe of compaſſion in my breaſt, for her wrongs, had made me look upon herſelf, and all that belonged to her, as my property, which I was as impatient to poſſeſs as if it was detained from me by injuſtice.

I therefore took occaſion, one day, when we were

alone together, to drop ſome words of concern, at my not having immediately by me, a ſum of money to lay out on moſt advantageous terms, which had been that very morning propoſed to me.

She directly took the hint, and ſaid, her little fortune was ſtill in her hands, in the ſame bank notes I had given her; and if the uſe of it, for any time, could be of advantage to me, ſhe ſhould feel a greater pleaſure in my taking it, than any profit ſhe could make of it, any other way.

This was juſt what I wiſhed; and though I could ſcarce refrain from laughing, at the eaſineſs with which ſhe took the bait, I would not accept of her offer but with this reſtriction, that I would conſider whether the terms propoſed to *me* might not ſuit *her*, and be more advantageous than the intereſt I could afford her if I ſhould make uſe of it myſelf. I ſaid this with an equivocal ſmile, which ſhe underſtood as I would have her, and immediately, with an aſſenting bluſh, put the notes into my hand, without requiring a receipt, or any kind of acknowledgment for them.

Having thus gained that which I reckoned the better part of Amelia, and ſure, as I imagined, of herſelf, when neceſſity ſhould humble her to my deſigns, as I had her whole means even of ſubſiſtence in my power, I directly reſolved to cloſe with an offer, ſome time before made me by a wealthy merchant, of a large fortune, with his daughter, whom I accordingly married, a few days after I had got poſſeſſion of Amelia's money.

I ſhall ſpare myſelf the pains of any farther deſcription of my wife, than that ſhe was the very reverſe of Amelia in ſoul and body; and my marriage conſequently as unhappy as I juſtly deſerved.

But I comforted myſelf with hopes of happineſs in the enjoyment of Amelia, whom I looked upon as my own, and only deferred making my baſe propoſals to, till her reſentment at my marriage ſhould cool, and I could deviſe ſome plan of privacy to elude the vigilance of my wife. Not but I dreaded the firſt emotion of her anger,

anger, which I expected to break out in loud complaints. But I was miſtaken in meaſuring her ſoul thus by my own. She ſcorned to complain; nor did I hear a word from her to interrupt the riot of my wedding. A greatneſs of ſoul, ſo far above my comprehenſion, that I attributed it to fear of giving offence to one in whoſe power ſhe muſt be ſenſible ſhe was.

But, at the end of the month, I was awoke from thoſe dreams, by a meſſage from her, delivered by a relation of her's, to deſire I ſhould pay in her money to him, for which he would give me a receipt. As I was not prepared for this, I believe it threw me into a confuſion too viſible; but I ſoon recovered preſence of mind enough to anſwer, that 'I could not but be ſurpriſed at ſuch a demand, as Amelia muſt be ſenſible, that I had paid her all the money of her's that was in my hands, for which I had her diſcharge in full.'

The gentleman replied in aſtoniſhment, 'Her diſcharge, Sir! that was when you *ſettled* her affairs; but ſhe ſays, that ſhe, ſince then, gave her whole fortune into your hands, to lay out for her. And, Sir, *my* couſin is known to be neither a fool nor a liar; though I believe ſhe has ſuffered ſeverely for her ill placed confidence.'—'Perhaps ſhe ſays ſo, Sir, (ſaid I) but I know nothing of the matter, and am not accountable for what ſhe ſays, or you think, Sir; and I ſuppoſe if your couſin is not a fool, ſhe has not given her money without ſomething to ſhew for it. But you muſt excuſe my talking any longer on ſo idle a ſubject; and ſo, Sir, your ſervant.'——The mine was now ſprung, and I waited with impatience for the event. As to her demand, I knew ſhe could never ſupport it, as there was no perſon preſent when ſhe gave me the notes; and I had negociated them in a manner, beyond all poſſibility of their being traced.

While I was hugging myſelf in this ſecurity, the friends of Amelia perſuaded her to bring a bill in chancery againſt me, in which the whole affair was ſet forth without any exaggeration. But this I made light of, as

I had *my lawyer* ready, under whoſe directions I ſwore ſuch an anſwer that ſet her charge entirely aſide.—Elate with this ſucceſs, I thought this the time to purſue my victory, and wrote her a letter, in which I attributed every thing of my conduct of late, that might have ſurpriſed her, to love, and deſpair of obtaining her by any other method: and offered her a ſettlement above the demand ſhe had made on me, if ſhe would conſent to my deſires. This I wrote in ſuch general terms, that my letter could not be brought in evidence againſt me, and the largeneſs of the offer was only to decoy her into a treaty, there being nothing farther from my thoughts than ever to make her independent of my pleaſure.

This inſult only added new fuel to her reſentment; and all the anſwer I received, was by another bill; but this met the ſame fate, by the ſame methods as the former.

After this I heard no more of Amelia for ſome time: but what was my aſtoniſhment, when I was informed, that ſhe had ſold off her jewels, and other little effects, and was gone to a relation of her's who lived in Jamaica! This broke all my deſigns; and deſpair of ever obtaining her awoke my love, and aggravated my remorſe for my ill uſage of her almoſt to madneſs.

From this time the hand of Heaven ſeemed to be upon me; every thing I had any concern in miſcarried; and, to haſten my ruin, my houſe was a perfect ſink of riot and debauchery: my wife, as ſhe had no charms to excite deſire, in a manner, publicly purchaſing the gratification of her luſts at the moſt extravagant expence, and living in a profuſion that muſt deſtroy even a royal fortune.

Mine, great as it had been, ſunk under ſo many diſſipations of all kinds; and I had no reſource left, as I ſaid before, but in precipitate flight, which Heaven made my paſſion for Amelia direct for Jamaica, to mark the juſtice of its vengeance the more plainly.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Concluſion of the hiſtory of Traffic. He arrives at Jamaica, where he learns that Amelia had been taken by the Spaniards. He turns buccanier, and ravages the Spaniſh coaſts, where he finds Amelia. Juſt as he is going to ſeize her, he is taken priſoner by her huſband. He is condemned to die. He ſues to Amelia for mercy; ſhe rejects him with abhorrence. His puniſhment is changed from death to the mines.

I Had hitherto varniſhed over my villanies with hypocriſy, and ſtrove to preſerve ſome appearance, at leaſt, of virtue: but this was a reſtraint no longer poſſible, nor indeed profitable to me now, when my flight took off the veil, and alarmed all mankind againſt me; ſo that mine was really a ſtate of war with all the world.

On my arrival in Jamaica, I had the addition to my grief to find that Amelia had been taken in her paſſage thither by a Spaniſh privateer.

This drove me to deſpair: I was wearied of life; but reſolved not to die unrevenged on thoſe who had thus, as I thought, robbed me of my hopes; never reflecting on the improbability of her hearkening to my ſuit.

Burning with this project, I fitted out my ſhip, and manned her with a crew as deſperate as myſelf; reſolving, though the war was at an end, to purſue my revenge upon the Spaniards, on the defenceleſs coaſt of their American dominions, in which my other paſſions were urged to haſte, by fear of my creditors, the news of my failing having come to Jamaica almoſt as ſoon as myſelf.

We therefore ſet out upon our cruiſe, or rather piracy, without delay, of which I ſhall not raiſe your horror with any further particulars, than that we went directly into the Spaniſh main, where we not only rifled all the ſhips we met, but alſo made deſcents on the coaſts, and and ravaged with a barbarity that was a reproach to human nature.

The tumult and hurry of this life kept my ſpirits in an agitation that gave a kind of reſpite to my grief; and the

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.
The distressed situation of Amelia who is rescued by her Husband from Traffic.
Vide Vol I. Chap. 6. page 33.

Drawn by E.F. Burney. *Printed for C. Cooke. June 3. 1797.* *Engraved by C. Warren.*

I determined to wait a little, to ſee if ſhe recovered, and ſtooping to raiſe her, to give her air, I received ſuch a blow from behind, as deprived me of all ſenſe for ſeveral hours; when, on my recovering, I found myſelf chained on the ground in a dungeon.

I was ſome time before I could believe my ſenſes, or conceive where I was; till the jailor coming to ſee if I was alive, gave me to underſtand, that my companions had gone off without me, and left me in the hands of a nobleman, who had himſelf knocked me down, as I was going to commit a rape upon his lady, while ſhe lay in a ſwoon; and that I had been thrown into this dungeon, that if I recovered, I might ſuffer the puniſhment due to the outrages we had committed both here, and in ſeveral other places of their dominions.

I wanted no farther information to ſhew me the horrors of my ſituation. I ſaw them all, and aggravated an hundred fold, by the accuſation of my own conſcience, that could now trace the hand of heaven in the juſtice of my puniſhment, which had thus overtaken me, in the preſence, and on the account of Amelia. I wiſhed for death, as my only relief, and determined to ſeek it: but, alas! my reſolution failed me; and I feared to die. In this miſery I was dragged before a magiſtrate, who enumerating the crimes we had been guilty of, condemned me to immediate death.

This ſentence, ſo much milder than my fears, awoke an hope of further mercy, to obtain which, my evil genius ſuggeſted it to me, to apply to Amelia, abſurdly flattering myſelf, that ſome ſparks of her love for me might yet remain alive, or at leaſt, her goodneſs take delight in ſhewing itſelf ſuperior to my ill-treatment. Baſe hope, that met its juſt reward!

I therefore waved attempting a defence of other crimes, as I was conſcious that I could not make any, but aſſerted my innocence, as to the particular charge of a baſe deſign upon Amelia, at the time I was taken, adding, that ‘ I had the honour of being nearly related to ‘ that lady, and that, if I was indulged with a few

‘ words

'words with her, in the preſence of all there, I hoped I 'might be found to merit a mitigation of my ſentence.'

On my mentioning the name of Amelia, I obſerved one of the principal perſons in the court, whom I ſoon underſtood to be her huſband, kindle into rage. He did not however interrupt me; but as ſoon as I had concluded, he ſtarted up, and exclaimed with the moſt furious indignation: 'Amelia, thy relation! No more than angels 'are related to devils, by ſpringing from the ſame Cre-'ator! Her virtues are diſhonoured by the claim! But 'ſhe ſhall appear and diſprove the odious calumny.'—Saying which words, he inſtantly went for her, while an hollow murmur of ſurpriſe and deteſtation made the ſilence of the court the more dreadful, and heightened the horrors of my ſuſpenſe.

But I waited not long: Amelia ſoon appeared, led in by her huſband, and being ſeated by the judge, 'Where,' ſaid ſhe, looking round with the ſerenity of conſcious virtue, 'Where is the perſon who ſays he is related to 'me?'

The ſight of her threw me into ſuch a conflict of paſſions, that without reflecting where I was, or how neceſſary it might be for me to raiſe her compaſſion by ſome moving addreſs that might ſoften the ſeverity of her reſentment for my former treatment of her, as well as aſſure her of my innocence of any baſe deſigns againſt her perſon, in the condition ſhe was in when I was taken; I could not forbear crying out in Engliſh, for I had ſpoken before in Spaniſh, in which I expreſſed myſelf but badly, 'O Amelia! haſt thou then forgot me?'

At the ſound of my voice, ſhe ſtarted, and looking earneſtly at me for a moment, fell upon her knees, and lifting her hands and eyes to heaven, ſhe ſaid aloud in Spaniſh, 'O God, how ſignal is this juſtice! Let me, 'let all the world acknowledge and adore it!'—And then riſing and turning to her huſband, who ſtood in amazement: 'This, my lord,' ſaid ſhe, 'this is the man of 'whom I have informed you: This is that Traffic whoſe 'baſe diſhoneſty obliged me to leave my native country;

'anp

'and ſo, by that providence which is able to turn the 'greateſt misfortune into a bleſſing, was made the cauſe 'of my preſent happineſs with you. I abjure all kin- 'dred with him; I deſire he may be examined as to my 'ſtory; and if he can vary in the leaſt from what I have 'told you, let me be condemned to the ſevereſt puniſh- 'ment but that of ſtaying longer in his ſight, or ever 'ſeeing his face more.'

On this ſhe withdrew, without deigning a look at me: but her words had a proper effect upon my heart, and I reſolved to do her juſtice. I therefore prevented her huſband's command, and in as few words as poſſible, related the black affair with the ſtricteſt truth. When I had concluded, her lord declared, that I had not only confirmed every thing ſhe had told him, but alſo added many circumſtances of my own guilt, which ſhe had omitted, or perhaps not known.

So complicated guilt ſeemed to require conſideration to find out proper puniſhment, ſo I was remanded to my dungeon, but without the leaſt encouragement to hope. The next day I was again brought into the court, where my former ſentence was changed into that of being broke alive upon the wheel; and this ſeverity was ſaid to be in juſtice to Amelia.

When I had ſtood ſome moments ſtupified with fear, the judge addreſſed me again in theſe words: 'Thou haſt 'heard, O wretched man, the ſentence due to thy crimes; 'but great as they have been, mercy extends her hand 'to thee. The virtues of the illuſtrious Donna Amelia 'over-balance thy guilt, and have prevailed for a miti- 'gation of thy puniſhment, in gratitude to that divine 'providence which made thee the cauſe of her coming 'among us. Thou ſhalt not die, becauſe we would not 'kill thy ſoul, before thou haſt had time to repent of thy 'crimes; nor ſhalt thou ſuffer torture, that thy ſtrength 'may not be impaired for the labour to which thy life is 'doomed; for this is the laſt day thou ſhalt ever behold 'the light of Heaven: Thou ſhalt immediately deſcend 'into the mines, there to work out the reſidue of thine

'unhappy.

'unhappy days, in raiſing that gold for the uſe of others,
'the inſatiable deſire of which was the cauſe of all thy
'guilt.'

I would have ſpoken, in the agony of my ſoul, to deſire death! but I was ſtopped by the judge, who ſternly ſaid, that to hear a word from me would be an inſult upon juſtice. On his ſaying which, I was hurried away to the mountains over us, and precipitated into this gulph, where I have now been near———

Juſt as he ſaid this, I was obliged to fly away to my body, which the unhappy Traffic had thrown from his hand, into the veſſel in which it was to be raiſed from the mine.

The length of this ſtory will make you wonder, when I tell you, that the ſpirit of Traffic *ſhewed* it to me in a moment, for no longer did the gold remain in his poſſeſſion, and I am always obliged to attend my body whenever it changes its maſter. But to underſtand this, you muſt be informed, that *we ſpirits do not diſtinguiſh our exiſtence by time or a ſucceſſion of parts, as men do; with us there is nothing paſt or to come, but every thing is preſent in one view*, ſo far as the natural courſe of cauſes and effects is preſerved free from interruption by ſuperior power.

CHAP. VII.

Chryſal purſues the hiſtory of his adventures. He explains ſome difficulties in his own nature. He is offered at a confeſſion to a prieſt. The confeſſion and creed of a native Peruvian. The penance enjoined him by a Jeſuit.

THERE is no crime, however black in its own nature, that does not receive an aggravation from hypocriſy; but the higheſt exertion of this vice is, when it makes a pretext of the beſt inſtitutions, to promote the practice of the worſt actions. Of this I have ſeen innumerable inſtances, in the adventures of my preſent ſtate; though none ſo flagrant as what I ſhall now relate.

You may imagine I felt pleaſure at emerging from that infernal abyſs into light. There was nothing remarkable in the three or four firſt ſtages I went through, my

temporary

temporary owners being only the refiners and other tradeſmen, who purified me from mixtures of mineral droſs.

I *ſee* you are deſirous to know how I could preſerve my *identity*, when melted down with large quantities of the ſame metal. But you muſt know, that *ſpirits have a power of expanding or contracting themſelves into what dimenſions they pleaſe*; *and that their life is not confined to any particular parts, as the heart or head, as in man, but is diffuſed through their whole bodies, ſo that any part being ſeparated from the reſt does not die*;* *but that portion of ſpirit which was in it, at the time of ſuch ſeparation, ſerves as a life for it, and becomes a diſtinct ſpirit, to inform that diſtinct body, and ſo on, ad infinitum*:† for as it is agreed upon, that bodies can be infinitely divided, upon the ſame principles, ſpirit muſt alſo; for it would be moſt abſurd and impious to deny of the ſuperior, any perfection which we attribute to the inferior. The enlarging of my body, therefore, by the addition of more matter, or the leſſening of it by ever ſo many diviſions, makes no alteration in my *ſameneſs*, ſo long as my conſciouſneſs remains‡: *The former only increaſing by energy, by the acceſſion of ſo much ſpirit as informed the additional matter*‖; *for we ſpirits embody ourſelves entirely in commixion, and reſolve into one***; as the latter ſeparates us again into diſtinct beings, to animate our ſeparate bodies.

The firſt abſolute owner to whom I belonged, was a native Peruvian, who had found means to purloin a conſiderable quantity of gold, part of which I was, and who preſented me, as a peace-offering to an eccleſiaſtic at confeſſion.

I *ſee* you have a curioſity to know my ſentiments on religious matters; but I have told you before, that I am not allowed to make revelations. Sufficient on this head have been already made to man, did not his perverſeneſs diſtort them from their original perſpicuity and perfection.

* Milton. † Eſſay on Spirit. ‡ Locke.
‖ Eſſay on Spirit. ** Milton.

As there was ſomething in the tranſactions which paſſed, when I was offered to this eccleſiaſtic, that may be new to you, I ſhall repeat ſome particulars of them.

You muſt have heard of the authority of the clergy, in all the countries which profeſs the religion of the *Roman pontiff*, and particularly thoſe under the Spaniſh monarchy. Of all the ſeveral orders which compoſe this political *hierarchy*, thoſe who call themſelves THE COMPANIONS OF THEIR GOD*, have acquired the greateſt power.

Though this title may appear profanely great to you, yet they ſeem to ſupport it by the ſhare which they aſſume in ſome of his moſt ſacred prerogatives.

To a reverend father, of this order, was I preſented, on the feſtival called Eaſter. He was ſeated in a retired chamber of his temple, in the exerciſe of one of the functions of the Deity, *hearing, and puniſhing, or forgiving ſins*, according to his ſovereign pleaſure. It is not poſſible to give you *here* an idea of the ſolemnity of this ceremony, in a country where all religion is evaporated into ſhew. Be it ſufficient to ſay, that the pageantry was ſuch a mockery of the Deity, as no other of his creatures but *man*, would dare to commit. The man who brought me into this myſterious fane, advanced with fear and trembling to the *apparent Deity* of the place, and, kneeling before him, confeſſed himſelf guilty of ſeveral *heinous crimes*, in the *admiſſion* of *involuntary thoughts* and *indulgence* of the *appetites of nature*, contrary to the rules laid down for him by his ſpiritual guide.—But this will be beſt explained by inſtances. The firſt crime which the penitent revealed, was having taſted a morſel of fleſh on a day when it was prohibited. The father, with a ſevere frown, told him, ‘ That was a ‘ great ſin, which he muſt atone for, by working two ‘ days for the church, without hire, and abſtaining from ‘ fleſh, at the ſame time, though it was generally ‘ allowed.’

He next confeſſed, that he had beaten a dog belonging to

* The Jeſuits call themſelves *Socii Jeſu*, the Companions of Jeſus.

to a prieſt, which had broke into his hut, and eaten the pottage prepared for him, by which means he had been obliged to go to ſleep without his ſupper. At this, the prieſt knitting his brow into tenfold auſterity, exclaimed, 'This is rebellion! rebellion againſt your God! Do 'you not know, that the dog of an eccleſiaſtic is above 'the greateſt (even white) layman, much more a wicked 'native! You muſt make amends!—you muſt!—or'—The tone and geſture with which he ſpoke theſe words, ſo terrified the trembling wretch, that he inſtantly put his hand into his boſom, and pulling *me* out, preſented me to make his peace. As ſoon as *I* appeared, the prieſt's features ſoftened, the tone of his voice fell, and receiving me, with a gracious ſmile, 'You have 'not ſaid,' ſays he, 'that the maſter of the dog was a 'jeſuit! the crime, therefore, though great, may be 'forgiven; but beware for the future, and remember, 'that the world, and all in it, belongs to us; and that 'to be guilty of the leaſt diſobedience, even in thought, 'is treaſon, and deſerves the ſevereſt puniſhment. Pro-'ceed: unburthen your conſcience! I know your 'thoughts, but would have you ſpeak them, that I may 'prove your ſincerity. Proceed, I am in haſte!'

The penitent then went on—'O father, be merciful, 'and I will confeſs all! Returning from my labour one 'evening late, I found my door faſtened, and, no one 'anſwering when I called, I burſt it in, when behold, 'I ſaw father Ignatius in the very act of carnality with 'my beloved wife Mootaw! I was amazed! and though 'fear prevented my ſtriking him, I could not forbear 'thinking in my heart, that he who does thoſe things, 'can be no *god*, he muſt be only *man*; and I curſed him 'in the bitterneſs of my ſoul; but he was drunk with 'wine, and did not hear me.'

'Wretch! devil! heretic!' exclaimed the father in a rage, 'thou intrude upon the privacy of a *Jeſuit!* thou 'ſay he was but a *man?* thou *think* he could not know 'thy very thoughts, becauſe he had drank wine! Auda-'cious ſlave! Art not thou and thy wife his? Had he

'not a right to uſe his own? Was it not an honour to 'thee, ungrateful wretch? and dareſt thou to *think a* '*Jeſuit is but a man?* But it is enough, the inquiſi-'tion ſhall teach thee faith and obedience; the inqui-'ſition—'

At that tremendous word, the wretch, half dead with fear, fell at his feet, crying out—'O father, O 'God, O king, forgive, forgive!' and pulling out of his boſom the reſt of his gold, 'Take this, O lord, from 'your poor ſlave, and forgive. Take this, which I got 'at the peril of my life, and ſaved to buy the liberty of 'my dear child, whom my maſter took from me: take 'it, and forgive; let her ſtill be a ſlave: let me never 'ſee her more! But Oh, the inquiſition! O forgive, 'forgive.'

The prieſt, molified at the ſight of the gold, replied, 'thou knoweſt my compaſſion, but thou abuſeſt it, and 'thy crimes are almoſt too great for mercy. In hope 'thou wilt amend, and tranſgreſs ſo no more, I will for-'give thee now: but thou muſt be puniſhed: Haſt thou 'no more gold?'—'O, father, no more, no more! and 'this I ſaved to redeem my dear child: O let me get 'my child!'—'What! inſolent! doſt thou preſume to 'capitulate? Thou ſhalt be puniſhed. Inſtead of get-'ting back thy daughter, thou ſhalt bring me thy ſon, 'whom I ſaw yeſterday, when I bade thee come to 'confeſſion. The boy I bleſſed, and kiſſed upon thy 'knee.'—'O father, father, take all the gold, and let 'my daughter remain, but ſpare my ſon; he is too 'young, O father, too young for *thee*.'—'The inqui-'ſition!'—'O take him father, take him, take all, but 'ſpare me; I fly to bring my child to thee; O ſpare me 'from the inquiſition!'—''Tis well, be comforted; 'thy ſins ſhall be forgiven; perhaps, if thou behaveſt 'well, thy ſon may alſo be reſtored. I fear thou haſt 'forgotten thy Chriſtian faith; let me hear thee repeat 'thy creed.'—The man, ſomewhat reaſſured, to hear that he ſhould eſcape the inquiſition, and comforted with the hope of having his ſon reſtored, began thus:—

'I believe

'I believe that God made the world, and all things in 'it, for my lords the JESUITS; and that I muſt wor- 'ſhip him, by obeying them, and ſaying the prayers 'they direct me to the ſaints, and the bleſſed Virgin, 'the mother of God, and above all, to the great ſaint '*Ignatius Loyola*. But if I diſobey their commands in 'any thing, or repine at their ſervice, or think that I 'muſt obey the viceroy before them, I ſhall be burned 'to death in the inquiſition here, and the great devil 'will burn me for ever, after I am dead.'

'Well, ſon, remember and practiſe thy creed, and 'thy ſins ſhall be forgiven thee. Go, and bring the 'boy when it is dark.'

CHAP. VIII.

The holy father's tenderneſs to another penitent, who had raviſhed, murdered, and robbed his own brother's wife. He accepts the ſpoils as a recompence to the church. He hints a method of preventing the danger of his brother's reſentment, and diſmiſſes him with ghoſtly advice.

THE ſeverity with which the jeſuit required ſatisfaction for the imaginary faults of the poor Peruvian, may, perhaps, lead you to think, that his zeal would be inexorable to real crimes; but the following account will ſhew you, that it was no ſuch thing, and that he looked upon nothing as a crime, which was not detrimental to the power, or temporal intereſt, of his ſociety.—The next penitent who approached the *mercy-ſeat*, was a commander in the army. He advanced with a military intrepidity, and kneeling down in form, 'Father,' ſaid he, 'I have 'a long reckoning to make, and ſome of the articles are 'rather heavy.' 'My ſon,' replied the prieſt, 'you 'have had experience of the indulgence of the church, and 'that no crimes are too black for her mercy, on *proper* 'penitence. Proceed then, and open your ailments to 'your phyſician, nor fear the efficacy of his medicines.'

'You know then, father,' ſaid the penitent. 'that 'I have long burned with a paſſion for the wife of my 'brother the judge. It was the ſubject of my laſt con-

'feſſion.'—'I remember it right well,' replied the 'father, 'and you may remember alſo what ghoſtly, yet 'comfortable advice I gave you, to ſtrive againſt, and 'ſuppreſs it if you could,'—'True father; but I told 'you then, that I knew it would be in vain for me to 'ſtrive, as I was reſolved to enjoy her, though at the 'hazard of life.'—'But, ſon, did I not comfort you, 'by ſaying, that if you found it in vain to ſtrive, and 'could not live without her, as life was the greateſt good 'in this world, it was juſt that you ſhould preſerve your's 'by obtaining what you was ſo violently ſet upon, but 'always be careful that you conduct matters ſo as not 'to give offence by your ſucceſs.'—'Ah! but father, 'that was not in my power: She was deaf to all my 'intreaties; and that threw me into ſuch deſpair, that, 'not able to wait any longer, I have this very morning 'had recourſe to force.'—'That was really bad, if it 'could have been avoided; but as you would not have 'forced her if ſhe would have complied willingly, that 'alters the caſe very much in your favour, and perhaps 'ſhe put you to that trouble only to ſave the appear-'ance of her own virtue, and if ſo, you have both acted 'right, and there is no harm done, provided the affair 'is not diſcloſed.'

'O, father, that is the thing I was afraid of that; 'and as her huſband had always been a father to me, and 'all my future hopes depended on him, I ſo greatly 'dreaded her telling him, that, to prevent it, as ſoon as 'I had enjoyed her, I cut her throat.'

'Murder, O fie; it is an heinous crime: blood calls 'for blood: your caſe is terrible.'—'I feared ſo, father: 'but I depended on your tenderneſs; and I did not 'think it reaſonable that I ſhould have all the pleaſure of 'the crime, and you only the trouble of forgiving. I ſtrip-'ped her of *theſe* jewels, which give me leave to offer you.'

'You are a prudent man, my ſon; I thought you 'would act with diſcretion. I accept the jewels, as a 'peace offering to the *holy church*, for your ſins; and as 'the value of them (indeed they are coſtly gems) proves

'the

'the ſincerity of your repentance, I ſhall not heſitate to 'pronounce your ſins forgiven.'

'* For though adultery is a great ſin, and in this caſe 'aggravated by rape and inceſt, yet, as you ſay, it was 'not becauſe ſhe was the wife of another man, and eſpe-'cially your brother, that you deſire to enjoy her, but 'merely as ſhe was a beautiful woman, therefore the 'adultery and inceſt comes in but by *accident*; and then, 'as you raviſhed her only becauſe ſhe would not comply, 'the ſin of the rape is certainly her's, as I ſaid before; 'for if I force a man to commit a crime, I am guilty of 'that crime, and not he: and again, though murder is 'a moſt heinous ſin, yet as you killed her not merely to 'indulge a murderous intent, but to prevent her diſco-'vering your having forced her, and ſo ruining you, the 'intention quite alters the nature of the fact, and makes 'it but ſelf-preſervation, which is the firſt law of nature. 'And, laſtly, as you took the jewels, not with a deſign 'to rob her, but to offer them to the *church*, and accord-'ingly have brought them, that concluſion ſanctifies 'the whole action, and makes your peace with Heaven.'

'For know, my ſon, that crimes which reſpect *man* '*only*, as in your caſe, rape, adultery, inceſt, murder, 'and robbery, though bad in themſelves, 'tis true, yet 'are a pleaſure to the church to forgive, to a faithful 'and penitent ſon, *who believes all her doctrines, and* '*pays due obedience to her clergy, the vicegerents of God on* '*earth, the receivers of her revenues, and diſpenſers* '*of her favours and vengeance; to whom all earthly* '*power is ſubſervient, who are the kings of kings, and* '*lords of the world.*—This, my ſon, is the doctrine 'of our holy church, as delivered by the moſt learned 'fathers of our order, in the belief of which you will 'be ſafe from all the powers of hell: do what you will, 'while you pay faith and obedience to the church, ſhe 'will pardon all your ſins.'—

When he had concluded his inſtructions, with this pious exhortation, and ſealed his abſolution with a bleſ-

'ſing

* See the caſuiſtical Divinity of the Jeſuits, throughout.

ſing, the purified ſaint aroſe, and ſaid, 'Holy father, thou 'haſt ſet my ſoul at eaſe, with regard to *hereafter*, but 'ſtill I fear for this world. It unfortunately happened, 'that I was ſeen in the fact by a ſervant who eſcaped 'me, or I ſhould have charmed her ſilence too; and 'now I apprehend ſhe will inform my brother.'—'This 'is unlucky, moſt unlucky,' replied the prieſt, 'I know 'not what to adviſe: I am utterly at a loſs: if you 'ſhould prevent her malice, and accuſe her of the 'fact.'—, O, but father, the rape; there may be 'appearances of that, which would diſprove my charge 'againſt a woman.'——'Miſtake me not, my ſon, 'I do not adviſe any ſuch thing! Heaven forbid that 'I ſhould adviſe to bear falſe witneſs againſt an innocent 'life; I am utterly at a loſs.'—'Suppoſe, father, I 'ſhould ſtill ſtrive to prevent my fears, by taking off 'my brother, as I cannot find her: this is the only way 'to make me eaſy; ha, father; is not that an happy 'thought? I wiſhed it had occurred ſooner, and then 'I ſhould have given you but the one trouble.'— 'Why, truly ſon, the dead neither make nor receive 'diſcoveries, and ſelf-preſervation will certainly juſtify 'any thing, as I have ſaid before: but I muſt not ad- 'viſe you; your own genius is ready, and can improve 'an hint; I muſt know nothing till the affair is done: 'all I can ſay is, that work unfiniſhed had better never 'been begun.'

'Adieu, my ſon, my bleſſing waits on all your un- 'undertakings. But be ſure to hold the indulgent mercy 'of the church in grateful remembrance.'

The officer went away, happy in having lightened the burthen that was upon his conſcience, and big with the pious project of making the murder of his brother the firſt fruits of his regeneration. He was the laſt *penitent* of that morning, and as ſoon as he was gone, his ghoſtly director retired to mortify his appetite in the refectory of the convent.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The father's rage on hearing that his penitent had ſecreted ſome of the jewels. The officer is purſued by his brother to the convent, whither he flies for ſanctuary. His reception from the father, and the terms of their reconciliation. The father ſends away the judge in a fright. The officer is received into the ſociety.

THE great value of the jewels, which the officer had preſented to my maſter, took up ſo much of his thoughts, that as ſoon as he had finiſhed his collation, he retired to his cell, to meditate on the farther advantages he might make of this affair.

While he was in this pleaſing employment, another eccleſiaſtic entered, to acquaint him with the murder and robbery of the judge's wife, and, among other particulars of the ſtory, ſaid, that her crucifix, thought to be the richeſt in *lay poſſeſſion* in all Peru, had been taken from her.—'That crucifix!' exclaimed my maſter, ſtarting, for he knew it well, having long paid his devotions to it, and now to be *cheated* thus of it, when he thought it ſo *juſtly* his due, provoked him almoſt to madneſs. 'That cru-'cifix taken too; Damned! murderous! deceitful vil-'lain! villain on all ſides! but I will be revenged!'

The other prieſt underſtood not what he meant, and was juſt going to enquire, when in ruſhed the captain all aghaſt, 'O father! father! ſaid he, as ſoon as he could ſpeak, 'ſanctuary! ſanctuary! my brother is at the 'gate, with all the officers of juſtice!'—At this the father grinned an inſulting ſmile, and beckoning to the other prieſt to withdraw, 'Wretch,' ſaid he, 'thou *ſacri-'legious* wretch! how could'ſt thou dare to enter theſe 'holy walls, violated by thy guilt? Didſt thou not 'fear the fate of Ananias and Sapphira! As thou 'didſt deceive me with thy feigned penitence, and haſt 'lyed to the Lord, in concealing what thou hadſt moſt 'juſtly devoted to him; I revoke the abſolution I gave 'thee, and will deliver thee to juſtice, to receive the 'puniſhment due to thy crimes: theſe holy walls afford 'no ſanctuary to *ſacrilege!*'

The

The poor criminal ſtood confounded at reproaches, which he dared not interrupt, though he could not comprehend the cauſe or meaning of them. At length, when the prieſt had exclaimed himſelf out of breath, the trembling wretch replied, 'O father! what can have 'kindled thy wrath againſt me? I have committed no 'crime ſince thy abſolution purged my ſoul! I was 'only going toward my brother's houſe, when I met him, 'and the ſervant with him, with all the officers of juſ-'tice, in ſearch of me, on which I fled directly to you 'for ſanctuary.' 'I grant no ſanctuary to ſacrilege.' —'What ſacrilege, O father?'——'The crucifix, 'deceitful wretch! where is thy ſiſter's crucifix? Haſt 'thou not defrauded the church of her due? Didſt 'thou not ſay, that thou tookeſt thy ſiſter's jewels only 'to make a peace-offering for thy ſins, and then to ſecret 'thus, the moſt valuable part of them! *This is defraud-'ing the labourer of his hire!* This is defrauding the 'church of her right, without making the proper com-'penſations! and what can be greater ſacrilege?'

Juſt at theſe words, a knocking at the gate awoke the *penitent* from his amaze, and made him apprehend that he had not a minute to loſe; he therefore, with the readieſt preſence of mind, replied,—'The crucifix! father! 'you aſtoniſh me! did I not give it to you?' And then putting his hand into his boſom, and pulling it out, with a look of ſurpriſe, he reached it to him. 'Forgive, 'O father,' ſaid he, 'the crime of inadvertency! I meant 'not to have kept it from you, but only overlooked it, 'in my confuſion. Accept it: accept all I am maſter of, 'and ſave my life.'

'Son,' replied the father, ſoftening his voice, and taking the crucifix, 'I am glad thou waſt not *intentionally* 'guilty of ſo unpardonable an offence! I believe, and 'accept thy excuſe. Be comforted, therefore, my ſon, 'thy ſins are forgiven.' 'O but, father, the officers 'of juſtice.'—'What officers, what juſtice dares 'attempt to ſhew her face within theſe walls? Thou 'art *my* penitent, I have abſolved thee, and I will defend

thee

'thee. Sit down and compoſe thy ſpirits, while I re-
'pel this bold intruſion on the peace and privilege of
'theſe holy walls.'

Saying thus, the father went to the gate of the convent, where ſtood the judge, diſplaying the guilt of the fugitive to the holy fathers, to engage them to refuſe him ſanctuary, and give him up to juſtice. But my maſter ſoon ſtopped him. 'Ceaſe,' ſaid he with a low voice, and downcaſt meditative look, 'diſturb not the 'peace of theſe holy walls. The man you ſeek is *my* 'penitent. He has made ſatisfaction to the church, 'and reconciled himſelf to Heaven. I come this moment 'from giving him the ſeal of abſolution. Diſturb not 'the raptures of his ſoul, that is now joining with the 'angelic choirs, in the hymns of joy raiſed in heaven 'for his repentance. Depart in peace.'

'How, father,' exclaimed the judge, 'can a wretch, 'guilty of ſuch crimes, ſo ſoon have made his peace! 'He has deceived you, father; he has not told you 'half his guilt: rape, inceſt, adultery, and murder! 'Can *they* be thus forgiven? So eaſy pardons but en-'courage vice.' 'And who art thou, preſumptuous 'man!' replied the father, raiſing his voice and putting on an air of authority, 'and who art thou, that 'dareſt thus to call the power of God's holy church in 'queſtion? What faith, or rather what *hereſy* has 'taught thee this preſumption? Doſt thou meaſure the 'divine authority of our unerring tribunal by the weak 'rules of thy blind law? Are not the keys of heaven 'our's; and have we not the power to looſe as well as 'bind? but I ſhall not argue more with thee *here*; 'there is a tribunal proper for ſuch *opinions* as thine; 'there try if thy knowledge of the laws will juſtify thy 'hereſies; there thou art not judge.'

The firſt mention of hereſy had ſtruck ſuch a terror into the heart of the poor judge, that he was for ſome moments unable to reply. At laſt, recollecting himſelf a little, 'I ſubmit, O father,' ſaid he, 'I am no heretic; 'I have no *opinions* but what I learn from the holy church

'church, whoſe power I acknowledge in all its divine 'plenitude.'—'Tis well,' replied the prieſt, "tis well, 'depart in peace, and to morrow I will viſit thee, and 'examine the ſtate of thy conſcience.'

The judge then making a profound reverence, withdrew without a murmur, and the triumphant father returned to his penitent. 'My ſon,' ſaid he, 'thine enemies are defeated. Thy reſt is ſecure *here*. But ſuch 'is their power, and ſo ſtrong the general abhorrence 'that purſues thy *late* guilt, that it will not be ſafe for 'thee ever to leave this ſanctuary.' 'O father, muſt 'I be confined for ever here?'—'I ſaid not ſo, my 'ſon: there is a way for thee to go in triumph out, 'above the power of thy preſent perſecutors.'—'O 'name it, father.'—Take our vows, heaven has bleſſed thee with a fertile genius, and ſteeled thy ſoul 'with fortitude. Theſe talents muſt not be buried; 'an accouut will be required of them; and where can 'they be put to proper uſe, except in the ſervice of the 'Donor, in his church? there they will raiſe thee to 'that rank and power, which thou ſeeſt us enjoy. I 'ſee thou yieldeſt. Reſiſt not the motions of the holy 'ſpirit. I receive thee into the fold. I ſalute thee 'brother. From this moment of thine election mayſt 'thou date thy entrance into the higheſt honours of this 'world. The day approaches when thy military knowledge and valour may alſo be called into action. 'Great events are ripening in the womb of time!'—'I yield, O father,' replied the penitent, 'I receive thine 'offer with due ſubmiſſion and reſpect; and from this 'moment dedicate my valour, ſkill, and every power 'of my ſoul and body to the implicit ſervice of thine 'holy order,'—'It is the hand of Heaven that leads 'thee, no longer ſon, but brother. I will go and acquaint our brethren with thy *miraculous* converſion 'and election. Thou haſt no more to do but to make 'thy will, and bequeath all thy wealth to our order.'—'*Bequeath*, my father, Muſt I die?' 'But to the 'world, brother, to live with us.'—'But I have

'nothing

'nothing to bequeath.'—'Leave that to us. Do you 'only give all your fortune, in the hands of your bro- 'ther, to our ſociety, in conſequence of your admiſſion, 'and let us find that fortune. I go. The bell rings 'for *veſpers*. I ſhall ſend our notary to you; and when 'that is done, we will reſtore our exhauſted ſpirits with 'a ſlight repaſt in the refectory, where I will introduce 'thee to our brethren.'

In a word, all things were executed, and the new brother admitted in proper time into the order, of which he has ſince riſen to be one of the brighteſt ornaments. And the judge, to avoid the imputation of hereſy, which his *implied* doubt of the church's ſanctuary had given my maſter the hint of, was glad to pay half his wealth to the ſociety, as the fortune of his pious brother.

Soon as this affair was thus happily completed, my maſter, that he might openly ſhew his adoration of me to the world, had me made into a crucifix, in which ſhape I was faſtened to his *roſary*, and there publicly received that adoration from the knee, which before was paid me only in the heart.—A repetition of all the occurrences I ſaw in the ſervice of this maſter would be unneceſſary, as the two I have related give a general idea of them.

CHAP. X.

Chryſal changes his ſervice, and embarks for Europe in an Engliſh man of war. The cauſe and manner of his coming that way. The occurrences of his paſſage. On his arrival in England he is ſent by his maſter to ſettle ſome miſtakes in the voyage.

I WAS heartily ſick of ſuch a ſcene, when the time came for ſending me into theſe parts of the world, where ſcarcity enhances my value, and makes my power more extenſive. There being a war between Spain and England at that time, *about the liberty of cutting ſticks upon a deſart ſhore*, it was neceſſary to ſecure a ſafe paſſage for the treaſure, by eſtabliſhing a right underſtanding with the commander of an Engliſh man of war, which was cruizing in thoſe ſeas. It fell to my lot to go on this errand, in the ſhape of a doubloon, into

which I was caſt, to ſave the profanation which a crucifix muſt ſuffer in the hands of heretics.

There was ſome little addreſs requiſite to conduct this affair with the captain, in ſuch a manner as to keep it ſecret from his officers, to gain all of whom would have been too expenſive; beſides that he would never truſt his *ſacred* honour to the fidelity of ſo many. But this was readily adjuſted. The refinements of modern politeneſs having ſoftened the natural ferocity of a ſtate of war, and admitting an intercourſe of courteſy between parties who profeſs to ſeek each other's deſtruction, the Spaniſh governor ſent out a boat with his compliments to the Engliſh captain, with a large ſupply of freſh proviſions, fruits, wine, &c.

This neceſſarily produced a return of civility from the well-bred captain; and in this intercourſe were the terms of his connivance ſettled, as the ſeal of which I was delivered to him among a very large number of my fellows, who honourably punctual to his promiſe, at the appointed time, ſailed away from that ſtation *in queſt of ſome ſhips of the enemy's which he expected to meet elſewhere*, and did not return till the Spaniſh treaſure was beyond his reach.

As this was a compliment of great conſequence to the Spaniards, the captain had been ſo handſomely conſidered for it, that his deſires were ſatisfied, and he only wiſhed to be ſafe at home, to enjoy the wealth he had ſo happily acquired. Often would he take me out, (for the beauty of my new impreſſion had ſtruck his eye, and gained me the honour of being kept in his purſe) often, I ſay, would he take me out of his purſe, and, gazing on me till his eyes watered, 'O thou end of all my 'toils and dangers!' would he ſay, 'thou crown of all my 'hopes! now I have obtained thee I am content! Let 'others ſeek that phantom, glory, I have in thee the 'more ſolid reward, for which I always ſought, nor 'ſhall any thing tempt me to hazard being ſeparated 'from thee.' A reſolution which he had an opportunity of ſhewing in all its ſtrength a few days after, when

a ſhip

a ſhip appeared, which he thought to be a Spaniſh man of war.

As ours was a ſhip of force, and all the officers (except the captain) were very poor; and as the Spaniſh ſhips are always richly laden with treaſure in thoſe ſeas, the crew was in the higheſt ſpirits at this ſight, and made every thing ready to attack her, with the moſt eager alacrity. But the caſe was quite different with the captain. He was now as rich as he deſired, and dreaded the loſs of that wealth which he had ſo long laboured for. He, therefore, retired into his cabin, while the lieutenants were *clearing ſhip*, and taking *me* out of his purſe, with a look of tenderneſs that brought the tears into his eyes, 'And ſhall I hazard the loſs 'of thee,' he cried, 'the object, the reward of a life of toil 'and danger? Shall I ſacrifice the only good of life to 'that chimera, honour? to that bubble lighter than 'air, and more variable than the wind, the intereſt of 'my country? What is honour without wealth?— 'What is a country to him who has nothing in it?— 'Let the poor fight for money, I have enough! Let the 'ambitious fight for glory, I deſpiſe the empty name. 'Let thoſe who have a property in their country fight 'for it, I have none, nor can have, nor any of its 'bleſſings without thee; and, therefore, will not ven-'ture thy loſs for any ſuch vain conſiderations.'

As ſoon as he had formed this prudent reſolution, he claſped me to his heart, kiſſed me, and returned me into his purſe, juſt as the lieutenant came in to tell him, they could now *make* the ſhip, which muſt be vaſtly rich, ſhe was ſo deep in the water. My maſter made no reply, but taking a teleſcope in his hand, he went upon the quarter-deck, and viewing her for ſome time, with great apparent earneſtneſs, 'You are all miſtaken,' ſaid he, 'in that ſhip: rich indeed! and ſo ſhe may 'remain for us. That ſhip is a firſt rate man of war 'by her ſize: and as for her depth in the water, ſhe is 'only brought down by her guns, which are fifty-two 'pounders at leaſt. *Put about* the ſhip, and make all

'ſail poſſible from her. I am anſwerable for his ma-
'jeſty's ſhip committed to my care, and will not ſacri-
'fice her againſt ſuch odds. Her weight of metal
'would blow us out of the water. Beſides, I have a
'packet on board, and muſt not go out of my way:
'*about ſhip*, and away directly, I ſay.'

The officers ſtood aghaſt at this ſpeech, that diſappointed all their golden hopes. They urged, they beſeeched, they remonſtrated, that it was impoſſible ſhe could be what he ſaid: they inſiſted that the colour of her ſails, and the heavineſs of her going, proved her to be a ſhip of trade that had been long at ſea; and as for her bulk, it only encouraged them to hope ſhe would prove the better prize, as all the ſhips that carry the treaſure are very large; that they had obſerved they *wronged* her ſo much, they could go round her if they pleaſed; and begged only that they might be permitted to take a nearer view of her, which they were confident would prove her to be what they ſaid. They alledged the opportunity of making all their fortunes; the honour, the intereſt of their country. They begged, ſwore, ſtormed, and wept; but all in vain. The captain had taken his reſolution; and would vouchſafe no other anſwer than a repetition of what he had ſaid before, 'That he was accountable for his majeſty's ſhip,
'and would not hazard her to gratify them: beſides, the
'packet he had on board, might be of worſe conſe-
'quence than the taking of ſuch a ſhip (ſhould ſhe even
'be what they ſaid, though he was certain to the con-
'trary) would make amends for. And that, as to go-
'ing nearer to her, the length of her guns would enable
'them to drive every ſhot through and through his ſhip,
'at a diſtance that his could never reach her from;
'though, if they ſhould be mad enough to engage her,
'his *ſmall* ſhot could never pierce ſuch mountains of
'timber as her ſides were barricaded with.' And ſo, as his power was abſolute, they were obliged to ſubmit, and *off he ſheered*.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the diſtraction which this affair

affair threw our ſhip into. The officers acted all the inconſiſtent outrages of madneſs. The men chewed the *quid*, damned their eyes and limbs for their bad luck, and went to work as uſual; while ſeveral poor ſick wretches, whoſe ſpirits had been ſo raiſed by the hopes of ſuch a prize, that they had forgot their complaints, and exerted all their ſtrength to aſſiſt in the engagement, now ſunk under the weight of the diſappointment, and crawled back, many of them to die in their hammocks.

But the captain had carried his point, and regarded nothing elſe: though indeed he was ſomewhat diſconcerted a few days after, when he learned from another ſhip, that ſhe really was a *regiſter* ſhip of immenſe value, and ſo weakened by hard weather and ſickneſs, that ſhe could not have attempted any reſiſtance, but had prepared to ſtrike the moment ſhe ſaw us. This information added ſuch fuel to the rage that inflamed the officers before, that all intercourſe between them and their captain was entirely broke off, ſo that I became his ſole companion.

This laſted all the while we were at a diſtance from England; but as we drew near home, the captain's ſtiffneſs began to bend, and he made ſeveral advances to a reconciliation and general amneſty, as he could not but feel ſome apprehenſions for his conduct from his ſuperiors. But all was in vain. The thought of returning in poverty, inſtead of that wealth which he had diſappointed them of, kept up their reſentments, and they determined to complain, if only for the ſatisfaction of revenge.

This convinced my maſter, that methods muſt be taken to obviate their attempts, or he might run a greater hazard at home than he had intended to avoid abroad. He therefore prudently concluded, that the ſame argument which had been ſo powerful with himſelf, would be the moſt effectual to vindicate what he had done with others, and that it would be better to ſhare the ſpoil, than riſk the loſs of all. For

For this intent, as ſoon as he arrived in England, he took *me* from his purſe once more, and looking earneſtly at me for ſome moments, 'We muſt part,' ſaid he, with a ſigh, 'we muſt part! but I hope to good 'purpoſe. Thou only waſt the cauſe of that conduct 'which now gives me fear; exert therefore thy influence equally, where I now ſend thee, and thou wilt 'excuſe my fault, if it is one.' Tears, at the thought of loſing me, here choaked his utterance, he gave me a laſt kiſs, and ſent me directly away, in company with a conſiderable number more, to mediate his peace.

CHAP. XI.

The good conſequences of a right underſtanding between certain perſons. Chryſal's reflections on his firſt ſeeing the public offices in London. His maſter viſits a gentleman, who in the vehemence of his rage againſt certain abuſes, hits himſelf a violent ſlap on the face. The neceſſity of decency, and the methods of ſupporting it, inſtanced in the hiſtory of a pretty fellow.

AS the delicate nature of this tranſaction required ſome addreſs, he entruſted the management of it to his purſer, who had convinced him by many inſtances, of his ſagacity in the methods of obtaining an influence over the great.

As ſoon as my new maſter arrived in London, his firſt care was to execute the commiſſion for which *we* had been given to him; but the perſon to whom this application was to be made, happening to be out of town for a few days, that he might not loſe any time, he proceeded to ſettle ſome affairs of his own; in the courſe of which, I had an opportunity of ſeeing into ſome part of the ſecrets of his myſterious buſineſs.

The profeſſed motive for his coming to town, was to ſettle his own, and paſs his captain's accounts, between which there was a connexion not neceſſary to be known to any other: for though my late maſter did not think it conſiſtent with his dignity to be too familiar with his officers, and generally ſlighted their opinion, if only to ſhew his own ſuperiority and keep them at a proper diſtance,

tance, with him and his purſer the caſe is quite otherwiſe, the beſt underſtanding always ſubſiſting between them, and every affair being concerted with the greateſt harmony to their mutual advantage: an agreement, which, beſide the comfort and convenience of it to themſelves, had this happy influence over the reſt of the ſhip's company, that it kept them, if not eaſy, at leaſt quiet, from all murmurings, and complaints of bad proviſions, ſhort weights, and ſuch-like *imaginary* grievances, which the reſtleſs temper of ſeamen is too apt to make the cauſe of much trouble to the purſer, and diſturbance to the captain, when theſe happen not to agree between themſelves. But, as the contrary was the caſe here, their common intereſt animated the aſſiduity of my maſter, and made him go directly to the ſeveral officers and contractors, with whom his buſineſs lay, to prepare every thing in proper order for public inſpection.

On my firſt going to theſe public offices, every thing gave me pleaſure. There was ſuch an appearance of regularity in all the proceedings, of eaſe and affluence in the officers, that I could not help ſaying to myſelf, 'Happy ſtate, whoſe meaneſt ſervants are gentlemen! 'whoſe buſineſs is reduced to a ſyſtem, above danger of 'confuſion or abuſe!' But a nearer view ſhewed things in another light. The firſt perſon my maſter went to, was the gentleman who ſupplied him with thoſe kind of cloathing for the ſeamen, which are by theſe merry poor fellows emphatically called *ſlops*. As he was juſt going to dinner, my maſter accepted of his invitation, and ſat down with him. A round or two of loyal toaſts to the ſucceſs of the navy, and continuance of the war, having waſhed down their fare, and refreſhed their ſpirits after the fatigue of a full meal, they proceeded to buſineſs.—

'I come, Sir, (ſaid my maſter) to ſettle the account of 'the laſt cruize. Here it is: you ſee moſt of the arti-'cles are gone off pretty well: but I muſt tell you, 'that you are more obliged to ſome of your friends for 'that, than you are aware of perhaps; for if I had not 'prevailed on the captain, to let the alehouſe-keepers

'and

'and gin-women come on board, and keep the slop-'sellers off, when the men received their pay, on going 'out, you would have had but a blank list of it. But, 'by this management, the fellows spent all their money 'in drink, and then necessity drove them to me for 'cloaths.'

'Here is to the captain's good health,' answered the other, 'and that I may soon see him at the head of the 'navy: I am very much obliged to you and him, and 'shall consider your friendship properly. But is there 'no way of preventing those pedlars from intruding thus 'upon us? I am resolved I will try: I believe I can 'make an interest, (you understand me) that will pro-'cure me an order to exclude them: at least if I cannot 'do that, I will insist on raising my terms; for every 'branch of business is now so loaded with presents and 'perquisites, that there is scarce any thing to be got. 'A man who goes to a public office, to receive money, 'runs the gantlet through so many of them, that, if 'he does not make up his accounts in a very masterly 'manner indeed, he will have but little to shew, for 'his pains, in the end.'—'Very true,' replied my mas-ter, 'I have had experience of what you say, this very 'morning. You know it is some years since I have 'been in town before: I was therefore quite surprised 'at the gay appearance of every clerk in the offices.— 'Our midshipmen on the paying off of a ship, are no-'thing to them! so, thought I to myself: this is very 'well! Such fine gentlemen as these will never stoop 'to take the little perquisites which their shabby prede-'cessors were so eager for: they cannot want them.— 'Accordingly, as soon as I had done my business, I 'was preparing to make an handsome speech, and a 'leg, and so walk off; but I was soon undeceived; 'and found, to my no small astonishment, that, if the 'case was altered, it was no way for the better for me: 'the present fine gentlemen being to the full as rapa-'cious as the former shabby fellows, and with this ad-'dition to the evil, that their expectations were raised

'in

'in proportion to their appearance, ſo that they muſt 'have a crown, where the others were ſatisfied with a 'ſhilling.'

'And how can it be otherwiſe,' returned the other, 'while the principals ſet them ſuch an example of ex-'travagance, and enforce obedience to it in the manner 'they do: for though their own exorbitant ſalaries ena-'ble them to live with the luxury of aldermen at home, 'and make the appearance of courtiers abroad, how 'can they think, that their hackney underlings ſhall be 'able to change their dreſs with the court, and appear 'with all the preciſe foppery of pretty fellows, if they 'have not clandeſtine ways of getting money: and that 'this is the caſe, I can give you an inſtance not to be 'contradicted.

'Perhaps you may remember a little boy that ran 'about the houſe here, when you were in town laſt. 'His mother was ſervant to my firſt wife: you cannot 'forget black-eyed Nan: who was the father is nothing 'to my ſtory, but I took care of the boy. When he 'grew up, I thought the beſt thing I could do for him, 'was to get him into one of the public offices, for he 'was too ſoft for my own buſineſs, and this I imagined 'would ſharpen him, and fifty pounds a year keep him 'from being an expence to me. Accordingly, I got 'him admitted as an additional clerk, in this buſy 'time; and, that his appearance ſhould not ſhame my 'recommendation, I added a London made ſuit to his 'country wardrobe, which I thought good enough for 'him to wear every day.

'Well; thus equipped, to the office he went, as 'good-looking a lad as ever came from a Yorkſhire aca-'demy, which had been the height of his education.— 'But I ſoon found that I had been out of my reckon-'ing; for, going with him to introduce him to the 'head-clerk, whom I had before ſpoken properly to in 'his behalf, I found the whole office in deep mourning, 'which, as it had been ordered only for the court, and 'was to hold but for a fortnight longer, I had never

'thought

'thought of dreſſing him in; but I ſoon found that I 'had not a proper opinion of the conſequence of the 'place. For the head-clerk gave me a friendly hint, 'that it was expected, that all the clerks in his majeſ-'ty's offices ſhould ſhew the decent reſpect of conform-'ing to the dreſs of the court on theſe ſolemn occaſions.' I could not help exclaiming, I believe a little too ſhortly, 'What, Sir, upon a ſalary of fifty pounds a year?' 'Sir,' replied he, 'nobody is forced to take that ſalary; 'and they who do not like the rules of the office are at 'liberty to leave it:' and then turned off upon his heel.—'I beg your pardon, Sir,' ſaid I, ſeeing my error,' 'it was an overſight of mine; but it ſhall 'be amended.'—'The ſooner the better, Sir,' anſwered he, 'for his lordſhip will be in the office to-'morrow, and he muſt not ſee any thing ſo irregular; 'and, pray, Sir,' turning to the lad, 'get that fleece on 'your head ſhorn a little,' his hair flowed down, in modeſt ringlets on his ſhoulders, 'and ſtrive to appear ſome-'thing like a *gentleman*.'

'I ſaw it was in vain to ſay any thing, and ſo took 'the boy away with me; and had him equipped, next 'day, in all the faſhionable trappings of woe, with his 'hair ſhorn indeed, and tied up in a bag, by a French 'barber, for I would not ſtand for a trifle when my 'hand was in, and then went with him myſelf, being 'deſirous to ſee how he would be received in his new 'appearance; but alas! I had forgot that indiſpenſable 'article of a gentleman's dreſs, a ſword, which I was 'therefore obliged to ſend out for directly. In a fort-'night's time, the order for the court's going into ſe-'cond mourning put me to the ſame expence over-again; 'for the rules of decency were not to be diſpenſed with; 'and then, in a month after, it was as neceſſary to 'trim his light grey frock with a ſilver edging of cox-'comb, that he might not appear worſe than his fel-'lows; all which, with many other as neceſſary *et ce-'teras*, by the end of the firſt quarter, conſumed his 'year's ſalary.

'This

'This enraged me to that degree, that I was going 'to take him away directly; but the boy had by this 'time got some insight into the ways of the place, and 'prevented me, by saying, that if I would try, but 'for another quarter, he was satisfied that his perqui-'sites would more than defray all such expences; and 'so I find they do, for though he is now as smart 'well-dressed a young fellow as any about town, he has 'never since troubled me for a shilling: nay, more 'than all this, assures me, there are some of his fellow 'clerks who keep footmen and horses, and have routs 'and concerts at their houses, as regularly as people of 'the first rank; and all by the perquisites of a place of 'fifty pounds a year.

'Now as all those perquisites are draw-backs upon 'us; as I said before, we cannot carry on the business 'on the usual terms, if we do not bring up our loss in 'the quality of the goods, for it would be absurd to 'expect, that we should lower our living to let such 'fellows run away with the profit of our industry. In 'short, my wife's chariot shall not be put down, nor 'will I deny myself a bottle of claret to give you, or 'any other friend, to save all the seamen in Britain 'from perishing with cold: charity begins at home; 'I will insist upon having those pedlars prevented from 'interloping upon our trade; and so, Sir, my service to 'you.'

CHAP. XII.

Chrysal's master gives his friend some hints, that make him lower his note. An uncommon piece of generosity returned more politely than could be expected from the parties. An odd story of an unfashionable steward. The success of Chrysal's meditation in favour of his late master.

MM master had heard him out, though not with the greatest patience, and now taking the opportunity of his stopping to drink. 'All this may be true,' said he, 'and what you propose might possibly have 'been done, and with the effect you desire, some time 'ago: but matters are altered a good deal, at present

'both

'both among the gentlemen of the navy, and here too, 'as I am told: and indeed, in reſpect to this affair, 'thoſe things are made ſo infamouſly bad, and rated ſo 'high, that nobody can ſpeak in defence of them: nay, 'it even goes almoſt againſt my own conſcience to *utter* 'them; for, only think with yourſelf, what a bare-'faced impoſition it is, to make a poor wretch pay ſe-'ven ſhillings for a coarſe rotten jacket, when even a 'Jew ſhall ſell him a ſound one, and of finer ſtuff, for 'four and ſixpence; and every thing elſe at the ſame 'rate. In ſhort, this point is ſo over-ſtrained, that it 'will probably overturn the whole trade in the end; 'for ſeveral of the captains are ſo provoked at it, that 'they take every method they can to prevent the men 'from taking up any thing from us: particularly that 'which I hinted before, of keeping off the alehouſe-'keepers, and ſuch people, and encouraging ſlop-ſellers 'to come on board, when the men are paying, by 'which means they buy good comfortable cloaths, at 'half the price of our rotten traſh: indeed, one of them 'went ſo far, as to buy in a parcel of good ſhoes, at his 'own expence, and make a preſent of a pair a-piece to 'all his *top-men*, when they were going out on a 'cruize, as they had ſpent their money, and could not 'buy for themſelves, and our ſhoes were ſo bad, that 'the firſt time they went aloft with them, after they 'were wet, the ratlings tore them all to pieces, ſo that 'it was a common thing to ſee a man come down bare-'footed, who had gone up with a new pair of ſhoes on. 'Though it is but juſt to comfort you, with an ac-'count of the return which he met with for his kind-'neſs, which was no leſs than a *round-robin** to the 'lords of the admiralty, for his refuſing to let them go 'aſhore, and ſpend their money, in the ſame manner, 'next time they came in.'

'And ſuch a return may their officiouſneſs always

* The name that ſeamen call their complaints againſt their captain; it is taken from the manner of their ſigning them, which is in a circle, ſo that there is no knowing who ſigns firſt.

'meet

'meet with,' replied the other, 'for meddling with 'matters which do not concern them: cannot they be 'content with their own large gains, without inter- 'fering to hinder others? But I see how it is: the 'spirit of patriotism has got into them too, forsooth, 'and they must be shewing their regard to the public! 'What an evil effect will the bad example of one man 'have! There was a time, when they would not 'have dared to do this. To say the truth, my friend, 'this is not the first alarm we have received on this 'head; though what to do about it, we cannot tell: 'indeed, I believe we must e'en mend our hands; 'which, as half a loaf is better than no bread, hard as 'it is upon us, is preferable to losing the trade quite; 'in the mean time, I am obliged to you and your cap- 'tain for your friendship, and hope you will accept of '*this* return.' They then proceeded to settle their accounts, as soon as which were finished, my master took his leave, and went on with his business, which was exactly of the same nature, and concluded in the same way, with every person whom they dealt with.

As soon as these transactions were ended, his next care was to pass his captain's accounts, which he also succeeded in, without any difficulty, though for this he was more indebted to the chance of a lucky minute, than he had apprehended. For they were no sooner closed, than an affair happened that gave a turn, entirely new, to the whole course of business, in that channel.

When the accounts of the next captain came to be examined, the clerk glancing his eye cursorily over them, in the usual manner, on looking at the amount, 'There must be some mistake here,' said he, 'How so, 'Sir,' said the captain, who was present, 'let me look 'at the account, if you please.' 'No, Sir, there is no 'mistake, I believe.'—'Pray where do you mean?'— 'In the casting it up, Sir,' answered the clerk, 'you 'see, the amount is made to be but eight hundred 'pounds.'—'Nor should it be more,' replied the cap- tain, 'I summed up the account myself, and these fi-

'gures are of my own writing.'—'How can that poſ-
'ſibly be, Sir,' returned the clerk in a ſurpriſe, 'but
'eight hundred pouds for all the repairs, *wear and tear*,
'of a man of war, on ſuch a ſtation, for four years! I
'ſuppoſe then, Sir, the ſhip had a thorough repair go-
'ing out, and wants the like now!— To be ſure, it
'can be done better and cheaper here, than abroad,
'and therefore you were in the right to bring her
'home to get it.'—Not at all, Sir,' added the captain,
'that was not the caſe: ſhe had no thorough re-
'pair going out, and is come home in better order
'than ſhe went, as this return of the officers of
'the yard ſhews.'—'Good God! Sir, how did you
'manage?'—'To the beſt of my judgment, Sir, I laid
'out nothing but what I thought neceſſary, and I charg-
'ed nothing but what I laid out: I mean not to arraign
'the conduct of others: I only ſpeak for myſelf. In
'theſe caſes I look upon a man as a ſteward to the pub-
'lic! and I ſhould think it as great diſhoneſty to be-
'tray, or break that truſt, as to wrong a private perſon.'

This ſpeech was heard with aſtoniſhment, and returned with a cold compliment, as it came too home to many, to meet general approbation; however, the affair neceſſarily had an effect not very agreeable to ſome preſent; for, the next captain's accounts ariſing to near four times the ſum of the laſt, ſuch an immediate precedent made the difference ſo glaring, that it was impoſſible to avoid putting a ſtop to them, and ſo he was mulcted his whole four years pay: though ours, which had been ſtill higher, had gone off ſmoothly, and without the leaſt remark.

My maſter having concluded this affair ſo happily, proceeded next on the great cauſe of his coming to town, in which, with our aſſiſtance, he laboured ſo ſucceſsfully, that the captain's *miſtake* met only a gentle reprimand.

I here came into the poſſeſſion of a new maſter, and immediately after changed my Spaniſh appearance for the faſhion of the country, and in the ſhape of a *guinea*,

entered

entered into the moſt extenſive ſtate of ſublunary influence, becoming the price of every name that is reſpected under heaven.

CHAP. XIII.

Chryſal explains ſome farther properties of his nature. He changes his appearance for the mode of the country; and enters into the ſervice of a noble lord. The ſagacity of Mr. Poundage, and his addreſs in buſineſs.

I AM now entering upon a ſtage, where the ſcenes are ſo various, and ſo quickly changed, that it will require your ſtricteſt attention to keep pace with my relation. But to make this the eaſier to you, and to diſencumber your ſurpriſe from doubts, at my repeating the paſt lives of perſons, in whoſe poſſeſſion I have been but a few moments, I muſt premiſe to you, that our knowledge is very different from that of men. I have told you, that we know all things *intuitively*, without the trouble, delay, and errors of *diſcourſe* or reaſoning. I muſt now further inform you, that this intuition extends not only to the preſent face of things, but alſo has a retroſpect to the whole ſeries of their exiſtence, from its firſt beginning: the *concatenation* between cauſe and effect being ſo plain to our eyes, that let us but ſee any one event of the life of a man, and we immediately know every particular that preceded it.

As to *futurity*, indeed, it is not yet determined how far forward we can look into that; ſome allowing us to have the ſame power of *foreſight* as we have of *retroſpect*; which was the opinion that ſupported the credit of oracles in former days. But that notion is now exploded, and men argue that our *foreſight* extends only to *natural* cauſes and effects: but in the actions of man, his *free-will* ſo often breaks that order, that it is impoſſible for us to know this moment how he will act the next, from any obſervation of the paſt; and they think they prove their argument by this, that if ſpirits could fore-know all a man's actions, it would ſpare them the trouble of tempting him to any particular one. But this by the bye! for as I ſhall confine my narrative to matters al-

ready paſt, without ever foretelling any thing, it is not neceſſary for me to determine a queſtion, that opens ſuch a field for the gueſſes of the learned. But to return to my ſtory.

From the *Mint*, where I put on the ſhape of a guinea, I was ſent to the Bank, where the pleaſure I had felt at the beauty and convenience of my new figure was conſiderably cooled, at my being thrown into ſo large a heap, as took away all my particular conſequence, and ſeemed to threaten a long ſtate of inactivity, before it might come to my turn to be brought into action. But I ſoon found myſelf agreeably miſtaken, and that the *circulation* there was too quick to admit of ſuch delay: for I was that very day paid out to a noble lord, in his penſion from the miniſtry.

It was about two in the afternoon, when I was brought to his lordſhip's levee, where the grandeur of his looks, and the magnificence of every thing about him, made me ſo pleaſed with my ſituation, that I thought I could be ſatisfied to fix my abode with him for ſome time.

He was juſt ariſen, and ſeated at the fire, leaning on a writing table covered with green velvet, on which lay ſome books open, and ſeveral letters which he had juſt broke the ſeals of, and was beginning to read, while a female ſervant, beautiful as Hebe, poured out his tea at a ſide-board, and a page like Ganymede, handed it to him.

In this eaſy indifference he ſat, caſting an eye upon a book, or reading a paragraph in a letter, between every ſip of his breakfaſt, when I was laid upon his table, by his ſteward, with theſe words,—'Two hundred, my lord.'—'Two hundred,' replied his lordſhip, 'the order 'was for five hundred!'—'But, my lord, the butcher, 'the baker!'—'What are theſe wretches to me? Is not 'my whole eſtate ſufficient for them?' 'My lord there 'is not a ſhilling to be got from your tenants, the times 'are ſo bad, and the taxes ſo high! and an ounce of 'proviſions could not be had.'—'Then you might have 'all faſted! I muſt have money for this evening; I am

'engaged

'engaged in a PARTY, and cannot be off.'—'My lord 'your lordſhip's taylor deſired me to ſpeak to you; he 'is to appear before his commiſſioners to-morrow, and 'begs'—'What can I do, I would relieve him if I 'could, but I have no money for myſelf: I cannot, will 'not do without five hundred more this evening, get it 'where or how you will.'—'My lord, I was thinking 'to apply to Mr. Diſcount, the ſcrivener, but he ſaid the 'laſt time, that he would lend no more on that eſtate, 'without the immediate power of cutting the timber.' '—Well, damn him, let him have it, though it will 'not be fit to cut theſe ten years; and, do you hear, 'get me a thouſand to day.'—'A thouſand, my lord! 'you ſaid five hundred: I am afraid he will think a 'thouſand too much!' 'Then he ſhall never have it; let 'me do as I will; do not I know that the timber is 'worth twice as much this moment, if I could wait to 'ſet it to ſale? I will not be impoſed on by the raſcal: 'I'll go myſelf to my neighbour Worthland directly; he 'is a man of honour, and will be above taking advan-'tage, though I did oppoſe his election.'—'As your 'lordſhip pleaſes for that. But then, perhaps, Mr. 'Diſcount will call in all his money, if he ſaw you put 'yourſelf into other hands; beſide, I am not certain 'that he will refuſe, and therefore I ſhould think it bet-'ter to try him firſt; you may do this after. Though 'I muſt take the liberty to ſay, I ſhould be ſorry to ſee 'your lordſhip ſtoop to Sir John Worthland, after all the 'expence you have been at to give him trouble. For 'to be ſure he would boaſt of it in the country, if it 'were only to make you look little, and prevent your 'oppoſing him again.'—'Why there may be ſomething 'in that: and therefore ſee what is to be done with 'Diſcount; but I muſt have a thouſand at any rate, 'five hundred of which give to poor Buckram, and bring 'me the other as ſoon as poſſible, for I am in haſte out.' —'Then your lordſhip had better ſign this deed firſt, 'to ſave the time of coming back again, if he ſhould do 'it.'—'Aye, let me ſee it; there: and make haſte.'—

'And then turning to his page, 'Reach me that paper, 'this pen is ſo good it tempts me to write a letter, while 'I wait for Poundage's return.' And ſo humming a new tune, he went on with his breakfaſt without the leaſt concern.

You are ſo great a ſtranger to the ways of that part of the world which deals in money-matters, that you will be ſurpriſed when I tell you, that, while this Mr. Poundage brought me from the Bank, he had called upon Mr. Diſcount, and brought him to his lord's to do his buſineſs.

But you muſt not imagine this was to lend his lordſhip money. Nothing leſs. It was only to appear as the nominal lender of his lordſhip's own money, which Poundage had that very morning received from ſome of his tenants in the country, and which if he could not bring it in better, he meant to replace with part of the price of the timber, which he was to buy in Diſcount's name, who was a creature of his own.

So remarkable a tranſaction gave me a curioſity to take a view of Poundage's life, the main lines of which I will juſt touch over, while you may think him gone for the money, and his lordſhip dreſſing for his engagement.

CHAP. XIV.

The hiſtory of Mr. Thomas Poundage. His lordſhip goes to his appointment. An evening's entertainment in high life. Chryſal changes his ſervice: his reflections on the ruling paſſion of the times.

MR. Thomas Poundage was the offſpring of a gypſy, who had left him on the ſtraw he was born on, in an old barn near his lordſhip's father's, his weakneſs and deformity making her not think him worth the trouble of carrying away.

The old lord himſelf happening to be the firſt who heard his cries, as he was riding by, took compaſſion on the little helpleſs wretch, and ordered him to be taken care of at his own expence, and not ſent to the pariſh.

Such

Such an uncommon inſtance of charity was immediately attributed to a tenderer motive: a ſuſpicion however injurous to his lordſhip, ſo advantageous to the *foundling*, that it doubled the care and attendance on him, and made him appear of ſuch conſequence that Mr. Thomas Poundage himſelf, his lordſhip's ſteward, condeſcended to ſtand god-father for him, and gave him his own name. As Maſter Tommy grew up, he ſhewed all the ſharpneſs and cunning of his race, which old Poundage repreſenting to his lord, as a capacity for learning, he was put to the beſt ſchools; and being of the ſame age with his lordſhip's eldeſt ſon, his preſent maſter, was ſettled as an humble companion and attendant upon him; in which ſtation, the pliancy of his temper ſoon gained him his maſter's favour, as his ſecrecy and diſcretion did his confidence; no ſervice appearing too difficult or mean for his undertaking, to pleaſe his maſter, eſpecially in the myſteries of intrigue; nor a look ever betraying his ſucceſs.

Theſe ſervices naturally produced an intimacy, that opened to him all his maſter's ſecrets, and gave him ſuch conſequence with him, that upon the death of his father, old Poundage was *ſuperannuated upon a penſion*, and the place given to him, in which he had behaved himſelf ſo judiciouſly, that, in about ten years, he had amaſſed ſo large a fortune, as to be able to ſupply his maſter's wants (with the aſſiſtance of his own money ſometimes) without the ſcandal of expoſing them to any other: a ſervice that amply recompenſed, to his lordſhip's honour, whatever prejudice it may be ſuppoſed to do his affairs.

'Tis true, his ſupplanting his godfather and benefactor, old Poundage, had not met with the approbation of ſuch as were not well acquainted with the world, and particularly as the old gentleman in his rage, had accounted for all his kindneſs to him, by owning a relation, which he had before ſtrove to fix upon his lord, by many plain inſinuations, though he now ſaid he had long before revealed to his ungrateful ſon the ſecret of his birth.

How-

However, if he had communicated his ſecret, our ſon of fortune had kept it ſo well, that he could now deny it with ſafety; nor had he profited ſo little by his father's example, as to be moved with a ſuggeſtion that evidently appeared, however true it might be in itſelf, to ſpring at that time from reſentment. And as he could not expect to reap any great advantage from being acknowledged for the ſpurious ſon of one who had many legitimate children to inherit his fortune, he thought it better to confirm the former opinion, by his ſlights of the claim of Poundage, and ſince he muſt be the baſtard of one of them, chuſe the lord before his ſervant.

But to return to my maſter. He was dreſſed by that time Poundage came back with the money, when taking the five hundred *for his own uſe*, he went to his appointment.

As to the other five hundred, which he had ordered to be paid to his taylor, for fear of the wretch's applying to the lord himſelf, in his deſpair, Poundage did ſend for him, and, *in compaſſion to his diſtreſſes, advanced him four hundred pounds*, of his own money, *for he had not a ſhilliug of his lordſhip's in his hands; for which piece of ſervice he deſired no other conſideration, than a receipt for five hundred pounds, though it might be ſo long before he could get it back, that he expected to be a loſer by his friendſhip, which Mr. Buckram need not, as he could bring it up in his next bill.*——Of this I came to the knowledge ſome time after, in the courſe of my circulation.

It was five o'clock, and dinner juſt ſerving up, when my lord joined his company. At dinner, and during the reign of the bottle for a couple of hours after, the converſation turned upon all the polite topics of the times, wherein there could be no long diſptues, as every difference in opinion was immediately determined by a *bet*, the ſupreme deciſion of peace, war, religion, and law. But this diſſipated *pidling* ſoon gave way to the ſerious buſineſs of the evening, to which they all adjourned, with an intention and anxiety worthy of the conſequence at ſtake.

It

It is impoſſible to give you any idea of this ſcene, in which every moment produced ſuch ſudden tranſitions from deſpair to exultation, from ſhouts of joy to the moſt blaſphemous execration of their very being, on the viciſſitudes in the momentary fortunes of the actors, that the very recollection of it is a pain even to me.

However, it made no ſuch impreſſion upon them: but they continued at it till about ſix in the *morning*, when they retired for the *night*.

In the courſe of the *evening*, I often went the circuit of the whole company round, and at length was carried home by a new maſter. But, before I ſay any thing of him, I muſt give you a few ſlight ſketches of the characters of ſome others of the company, and particularly of my late lord, in whoſe whole appearance and behaviour there was ſomething ſo extraordinary.

There is ſcarce a ſtronger inſtance of the tyranny of avarice over the heart of man, than the paſſion for *play*, which now is ſo general and prevalent, as to ſeem in a manner to have drowned every other. The tendereſt, the ſtrongeſt connexions of friendſhip and nature, yield to the force of this reſiſtleſs infatuation. The perſons who eſteem each other moſt in the world this moment, no ſooner ſitting down to this *deciſion of fate*, than they labour for each others ruin, with all the aſſiduity and eagerneſs of the moſt inveterate hatred and revenge.

Nor is this practice confined to thoſe alone whom neceſſity may ſeem to ſtimulate to ſo deſperate a reſource; the richeſt are often the moſt infatuated with this paſſion, who, poſſeſſing already more than they can enjoy, hazard that, and give themſelves up a prey to anxiety, and often to deſpair, to indulge a fruitleſs deſire for more.

Of this laſt claſs were moſt of the company, among whom my *late* lord had ſpent this evening: ſome few indeed there were whom this folly had reduced to the former, and neceſſitated to live by their experience in the art which had been their ruin.

CHAP. XV.

The company repreſented in perſpective. Set a beggar on horſeback, and he'll ride to the devil. A new way of parrying a dun, and paying debts of honour. A commiſſion-broker ſlung. A connoiſſeur deceived by his own judgment and eminent taſte for virtu. Hiſtory of a noble breeches-maker.

I SEE your curioſity riſe at the mention of ſo ſtrange a ſcene as this muſt be. It is natural, and therefore ſhall be indulged. But, as all deſcription muſt fall ſhort of it, I ſhall repreſent it to you in perſpective. Do you therefore reſolve ſenſe into imagination, *a practice not uncommon with the philoſophic mind*, and to pure abſtracted attention ſhall my words become things, and appear as viſible to your eyes, as if they were purged with *euphraſy* and *rue*.

Obſerve now, at the head of the table, that heavy looking figure, whoſe ſaturnine complexion gives a ſolemnity to his appearance, even beyond his declining years. This man wore out the prime of his life in indigence and hardſhips, till chance by one ſucceſsful ſtroke in his buſineſs, gave him ſuch a fortune, as was deemed ſufficient merit to deſerve nobility, and entitle him to one of the firſt employments in the ſtate.

Sudden elevation makes a weak head giddy; the plain, good-natured, cheerful man, is loſt in the ſolemn proud peer; who is harder of acceſs than his ſovereign, and ſeems to value himſelf on having all the hours he has ſpent in cringing to the great, repaid tenfold in attendance upon him. As to the buſineſs of his office, the whole ſyſtem of human politics is in general ſuch a jumble of blundering and villany, that I can ſeldom bring myſelf to beſtow a moment's notice on it, ſo can ſay no more of his, than that the little attention and leſs capacity, he has for it, may moſt probably give juſt occaſion for all the murmurings that are againſt him. But this was not the motive of my pointing him out to you. It was his infatuation to the love of play, which makes him hazard that wealth which he ſo long felt the want of, in

hopes

hopes of acquiring more, though he has already more than he can enjoy.

This has been an unſucceſsful night with him. Obſerve how ſtupified he looks at his loſs! Extend the view but a few moments farther, and ſee how he ſits down in the common hall of the tavern, among ſervants and chairmen, inſenſible of the impropriety of ſuch a place, and unable to order his ſervants to carry him home: nor is it improbable that the ſcene he has juſt quitted may remain ſo ſtrongly on his imagination to-morrow, that he may write down the rules of the game he has been playing at, inſtead of the orders of his office, as he has done once before.

Next to him, you ſee a ſhort ruddy cheerful looking man. That is one of the deplorable inſtances of the evil of this prepoſterous paſſion. With every advantage of rank, abilities, and fortune, did that perſon ſet out in life. But, alas! ſoon was the proſpect of his future happineſs and grandeur overcaſt! Soon did gaming reduce him not only to a neceſſity of proſtituting his abilities to the prejudice of his country, but alſo of deſcending to every iniquitous myſtery of the art to ſupport his practice of it; for ſo bewitched is he to it, that he cannot reſiſt, though he now can ſcarce get any perſon to play with him, his want of money and his ſkill in the whole art are ſo well known.

This has been a ſucceſsful evening with him, as you may ſee by his extraordinary flow of ſpirits: not that his natural vivacity ever forſakes him in the worſt reverſe of fortune. He has won a conſiderable part of the great loſings of the perſon we have juſt been taking notice of; and though he has many demands upon him for every ſhilling of it, yet, far from thinking of paying one of them, he is this moment planning new ſcenes of pleaſure to conſume it all, chuſing to let his creditors all be bankrupts, or even to compound with them as a bankrupt himſelf, rather than deny his appetites their full gratification.

It is impoſſible to convey a juſt notion of ſuch a complicated

plicated character, by any deſcription; I ſhall therefore juſt mention one or two of his actions, from which you may, in ſome meaſure, form a judgment of the whole.

Having a preſſing occaſion, ſome time ago, for an hundred guineas, he applied to one of thoſe neceſſary attendants of the great, who, at the moderate intereſt of five hundred per cent. are always ready to ſupply them with money to diſcharge their debts of honour. This friendly gentleman, being well acquainted with the character of the borrower, made many ſcruples to comply with his requeſt, till at length he ſuffered himſelf to be prevailed upon conditionally, that, if the principal and premium were not paid in a week, he ſhould receive a guinea as a further gratuity then, and every time after that he ſhould demand his money, till it was paid. Accordingly, at the end of the week he made his demand, and, as he expected, received his guinea; from which time he took care to call upon him every ſecond or third day, till he had received his money more than twice told, thus in ſingle guineas, for forbearance; always timing his applications, when he ſaw his debtor in company with perſons, before whom he would not even enter into an expoſtulation, for fear of having the affair known, ſo that as ſoon as he ſaw him approach, without waiting to be aſked, he uſed to pull out his purſe, and calling him to him, gave him a guinea, to go and buy ſomething for him; an errand the other ſufficiently underſtood.

The conſtant repetition of this could not always eſcape obſervation, nor was the cauſe of it unſuſpected by moſt of his acquaintance; ſome of whom happening to hint it to him one evening, when wine had taken away all reſerve, he, who was above being aſhamed of any thing, honeſtly owned the whole tranſaction, and joined in the general laugh at his own folly: however, as the ſecret was now out, he reſolved to ſubmit to the impoſition no longer; and the next time his friend waited upon him, inſtead of hurrying him away as before, he publicly entered into a diſcuſſion of his demand, and as he could not deny his having received more than double what he had lent,

the debt was adjudged by the company to be ſufficiently diſcharged, and he was literally ſent off without his errand.

This ſtory ſhews only the levity and inconſiderateneſs of his temper, and the diſtreſſes, in which they entangled him: but the following is of a blacker hue, and will prove, that he is capable of doing any thing to extricate himſelf from thoſe diſtreſſes, and provide for the gratification of his paſſions.

Not very long ago, a young gentleman, who had a military turn, collected the whole of his ſmall fortune, to purchaſe himſelf a commiſſion in the army. Having lodged his money in the hands of his *agent*, who, for the convenience of making uſe of it, and to enhance the price of his own trouble, was in no haſte to diſpatch the affair, he made an excurſion to the country town, in which this gentleman's ſeat was, and where he happened to be at that time.

As the hoſpitality of his temper made his houſe open to every ſtranger, who had the appearance of a gentleman, the young ſoldier ſoon became acquainted with him, and in return for the friendſhip for which he miſtook the general affability of his converſation, and to diſplay his own importance, told him his preſent ſituation, and the method he had taken to procure ſucceſs to his hopes of a truncheon. His friend expreſſed the ſtrongeſt approbation of his ſpirit, and encouraged his hopes, but told him that he had choſen the worſt way of entering into the army, as the ſum of money, which he had given the agent, to purchaſe him only a pair of colours, applied properly to ſome of the perſons in office, and backed by good intereſt, would not only procure him a cornetcy of horſe, at preſent, which was of three times that value, but would alſo eſtabliſh ſuch an intereſt for him, as ſhould greatly accelerate his riſe to ſtill higher promotions.—Struck with ſuch a promiſing proſpect as this ſpeech opened to him, the young gentleman anſwered, that he was ſenſible of the truth of what the other ſaid, but that it was his unhappineſs to have had no friend to direct him

how to apply his money properly, much leſs to back him afterward. 'That's very hard,' replied his friend, 'I wiſh I had known you ſooner.'—This hint was enough; the young gentleman, fired with ſuch flattering hopes, flew directly to town, and, finding that his agent had not yet concluded the purchaſe for him, took his money out of his hands, and returning to the country, in the confidence of his heart, went and preſented it to his friend, throwing himſelf entirely upon his patronage and protection.

It is probable, that, when this gentleman began the diſcourſe which gave occaſion to this action, he meant no more by it, than to diſplay his own judgment and intereſt, without any farther deſign; but the ſight of five hundred pounds was a temptation he could not reſiſt.—He, therefore, with ſeeming ſurpriſe and reluctance, received the money, and took the young gentleman into his care.

For ſome time he fed him with hopes of immediate ſucceſs; but, his impatience beginning to grow troubleſome, upon his return to town, for the winter, he gave him to underſtand, 'that he was offended at his 'importunity: that, ſince he had undertaken to ſerve 'him, he would do it as ſoon as he could; but that 'he need not give himſelf the trouble of calling upon 'him any more, as he would receive ſufficient notice of 'his ſucceſs in the public papers.'—Saying which words, he left him. Thunder-ſtruck at this ſpeech, the young gentleman withdrew, and, meeting one of his acquaintance, informed him of what had happened. This perſon, who was perfectly acquainted with the gentleman's character, ſaw immediately into the whole affair, and explained the impoſition to him. This made him mad; he returned directly to demand his money, but was denied admittance, nor would his letters even be received by the porter. His caſe was now deſperate; while he had paid attendance upon his patron, he had exhauſted his means of ſubſiſtence to the laſt mite, ſo that he now was in want of a morſel of bread. In this ſituation, a

moment

moment was not to be loſt; and luckily, his deſpair ſuggeſted to him the only means that could poſſibly have procured him redreſs. He drew up a ſtate of his caſe in a very few words, and, putting on the beſt ſuit of cloaths he had left, went the very next day to court, where, in ſight of his patron, he bent his knee to his ſovereign, and preſented it to him. Something particular in his air and manner ſtruck the monarch's notice; he read the petition; and then reached it to this gentleman, in whoſe altered countenance he ſoon read the truth of the contents: turning, therefore, from him, with a look of ineffable reproof and contempt, he ordered the ſecretary at war to make out a commiſſion for the young gentleman that very day, and from that hour has never held the other in the leaſt degree of eſteem, or favour; but he is inſenſible to ſuch diſgrace, and while he can gratify his paſſions, in the manner you ſee at preſent, cares not what the world thinks or ſays of him.

Oppoſite to him, on the other ſide of the table, obſerve an uncommonly large-boned bulky man: this is one of the inſtances of the inſufficiency and weakneſs of human laws, which, ſtriving to remedy one evil, often make way for a greater. That man is now advanced to the foremoſt rank of the militia liſt, merely by *ſeniority!* A grievous abuſe of that inſtitution, which to prevent favour from advancing its minions over friendleſs merit, ordains, that no ſenior officer ſhall ſerve under his junior; but now, by the natural force of human perverſion, this well-deſigned regulation is made a pretext for giving command to ſuch as have no other claim to it, than (what ſhould indeed incapacitate them) old age, and ſo keeping back the advance, and damping the ardour, of youth.

As their is no man without ſome particular ambition, his has taken a turn, which perhaps you may think the moſt remote from his profeſſion of a ſoldier. Pictures! painting is the ſole object of his admiration, the only knowledge he values himſelf upon. Tell him of a ſiege,

or a battle, an attack, or a retreat, conducted with the greateſt ſkill, and he hears you unmoved, nor will interrupt your account with a ſingle queſtion: but name Rembrandt or Titian, and he immediately gives you a diſſertation on their excellencies, and the difference of their ſchools! Tell him but of a ſale of pictures, on the day of a review, and, if he is forced to feign ſickneſs to excuſe his attendance in the field, he will be at it.

Such abſurd paſſions are always the objects of artifice and impoſition. An ingenious painter of this country, not very long ſince, whoſe works would have been a credit to the beſt of foreign ſchools, but were deſpiſed at home, bethought himſelf of a way to turn this perſon's foible to ſome advantage. He made ſome deſigns, landſcapes, and other drawings, in the manner of ſome of the greateſt of the ancient Italian maſters, whoſe names he marked upon the backs of them, in the characters of their times, and giving them *the caſt* of age, made them up in an Italian cheſt, and by the aſſiſtance of a captain of a ſhip, had them entered at the cuſtom-houſe, as directly from Italy, and conſigned to a ſtranger, as from a friend there, to be diſpoſed of in London.

The report ſoon reached this lover of *virtu*, who was ſo raviſhed with the thought of gaining ſuch a treaſure, that he flew to the place, and, *being convinced by his judgment of the authenticity of them*, bought them all together, for a very large ſum, but far ſhort of their *real* value, had they been to be diſpoſed of by a perſon *acquainted* with it.

Though this ſucceſs was very pleaſing, and uſeful to the painter, he did not ſtop here. This perſon had ſome way taken a diſlike to him, which he indulged by running down his work. This, therefore, was an opportunity for revenge not to be miſſed. He let him boaſt of his acquiſition in all companies, and diſplay his judgment in proving them to be the genuine productions of thoſe great maſters, by criticiſms which none but a connoiſſeur could make: but then, as ſoon as the whole affair was ſo public, that there was no denying it, what

does

does the incenſed artiſt but produce the counterparts of them all, which he had kept for the occaſion, ſo like as not poſſibly to be known aſunder, and unravelled the whole affair, taking care only to keep himſelf clear of the law, by ſaying, that he had ſold thoſe things as of no value, at a very ſmall price, to a *Jew!*

This was a ſevere ſtroke! It overturned the only reputation which he had even an ambition of, and robbed him of a large ſum of money beſide; to recover which loſs, and divert the chagrin of the whole deceit, he has recourſe to play, which he follows with the eagerneſs you ſee.

But his is not the only abſurd paſſion that ſtrikes the notice of an accurate obſerver of mankind. The perſon on his right hand was born in the firſt rank of the ſtate, but by ſome unlucky miſtake, the qualifications which fell to his ſhare belonged to one of the loweſt claſſes of mechanics. While others of his rank are marſhalling armies, and planning conqueſt, correcting the abuſes, or ſtudying to riſe upon the ruins of the ſtate, his utmoſt ambition is, to cut out a buckſkin to advantage, and be reckoned the beſt breeches-maker of his time.—Harmleſs as ſuch an humble turn may ſeem, it involves the noble artiſt in many whimſical diſtreſſes.

His paſſion for breeches-making is ſo ſtrong, that he never ſits near any perſon, but his hand is immediately and unpremeditatedly, applied to his thigh, which he has no ſooner ſtroked down two or three times, than he thinks he conceives the ſize and ſhape of it ſo exactly, that he can completely fit it, without the trouble of taking any other meaſure; and accordingly never fails to introduce a diſſertation on the art, which he concludes with the demonſtrative proof of his ſkill, of offering to make a preſent of a pair of his own making. The advantage of ſuch an offer, and the pleaſure of encouraging ſo illuſtrious a mechanic, make his preſent always accepted, ſo that he has generally the moſt buſineſs of any one in the trade, though ſome accidents have hap-

pened, that have almoſt made him afraid to purſue ſuch an indiſcriminate method of ſoliciting cuſtom.

Happening ſome time ago, in a very large company, to ſit near a young gentleman, whoſe delicate complexion had brought him, though moſt unjuſtly, under a ſuſpicion of indulging unnatural paſſions, he applied his hand to the gentleman's thigh, and began to feel it all over, to take meaſure of it, according to his cuſtom. The gentleman, who was not ignorant of the imputation he lay under, and therefore was more quickly ſenſible of every thing that might poſſibly ſeem to allude to it, thought this application to his thigh was meant either to tempt, or inſult him, for he had been informed that thoſe wretches often make their infamous addreſſes in this manner, and was enraged at it to ſuch a degree, that, forgetting all reſpect to the company preſent, and to the rank of his ſuppoſed lover, he felled the poor breeches-maker to the ground, and, ſtarting from his chair, drew his ſword, and would have run him through the body, had not his arm been happily ſeized by the gentleman who ſat next him.

It is not eaſy to deſcribe the aſtoniſhment of the company at ſuch an outrage, which they could attribute to nothing but phrenzy; but the gentleman ſoon undeceived them. 'Infamous, unnatural wretch!' exclaimed he, as ſoon as rage permitted him utterance, 'I'll make 'you know, that I am not an object of your brutal 'paſſions. I have expoſed you here, but your infamy 'ſhall not be confined to this company, I'll publiſh it 'to all the world. Unhand me, gentlemen, and let 'me waſh off the diſgrace of ſuch an attempt with the 'monſter's blood! I'll gladly pay my own life as a 'forfeit to the defect of the law, that has provided no 'puniſhment for ſuch odious crimes.'—To the greater part of the company this ſpeech was quite unintelligible, and only confirmed the ſuſpicion of his madneſs; but one of them, who had obſerved the gentleman change countenance upon the noble mechanic's applying his hand to his thigh, ſoon cleared up the myſtery. 'I be-

'lieve,

'lieve, Sir,' ſaid he, 'you have been too haſty, and 'miſtaken an intention, not only harmleſs in itſelf, but 'generous alſo, for one of a very different nature!— 'Have you any other reaſon for accuſing his lordſhip of 'unnatural deſigns upon you, beſide his laying his hand 'upon your thigh, and feeling it?'—'No, Sir, but 'that I think enough; too much for him to offer, or 'for me to bear; nor will I bear it.'—'I do not pre-'tend, Sir, to tell you what you muſt bear, but this I 'can tell you, that you have entirely, and moſt injuri-'ouſly, miſtaken his lordſhip, who meant no more by 'that action which gave you ſuch offence, than juſt to 'take your meaſure for a pair of breeches, which, if 'you had not been ſo haſty in your reſentment, he would 'have made you a preſent of.'—'Death, Sir, do you 'make a jeſt of me.'—His lordſhip, who had heard their diſcourſe, and was by this time ſo far recovered of his fright as to be able to ſpeak, interpoſed here, or the affair might probably have taken another turn.— 'No, indeed, Sir,' ſaid he, 'he does not jeſt! I 'meant nothing more: and all the company preſent 'knows, that I never had any paſſion in my life, but 'for breeches-making; and, if you apprehended any 'thing elſe, you were very much miſtaken.'

This ſpeech, and the manner in which it was deli-vered, were not to be reſiſted. They diſarmed the gen-tleman's rage inſtantly, and his only concern was how to make up the matter, ſo as to avoid the ridicule of ſuch a miſtake. He, therefore, told his lordſhip, that he was very ſorry for his error, and hoped that he would attribute the conſequences of it to that delicate ſenſi-bility, which every man of honour muſt have under ſuch an apprehenſion. This was ſufficient: his lord-ſhip, inſtead of harbouring reſentment, was glad to get ſo eaſily rid of the affair; and to convince the gentleman, both of the ſincerity of his reconciliation, and that he had no other deſign, than what he ſaid, in the action that gave him the offence, he undertook to make him a pair of buckſkin breeches, only from the meaſure he

had

had taken, that ſhould fit him better than any he had worn in his life.

CHAP. XVI.

The character of a Virtuoſo. The hiſtory of an horned cock; with ſome curious philoſophical remarks on cornuted animals.

OPPOSITE to him ſits one of thoſe philoſophers who build their pretences to ſcientific fame, on making collections of the anomalous *frolics* of nature; without ever attempting to inveſtigate the wiſdom and power diſplayed in the regular proceſs of her works. In the courſe of this ſtudy, a whimſical adventure lately happened to the noble Virtuoſo before us. A man that bought poultry round the country, to ſupply the markets of this great city having got intelligence of his lordſhip's taſte, reſolved to turn it to his own advantage. He accordingly procured a moſt beautiful game cock, and ſawing off the ſpurs of another cock that had very long ones, contrived to fix them firmly with wax on the head of this bird, on each ſide of the comb, with the points turned backwards, and inclining from each other, like the horns of a goat, in ſuch a manner, that they appeared to have grown naturally there.

As ſoon as he found that he could bring his ſcheme to a probability of ſucceſs, he waited on the virtuoſo, and giving notice, that he had ſomething curious to communicate, was immediately admitted to an audience, in his *muſæum*, where he informed him, that he had received intelligence, from a particular friend of his, a Scotch pedlar, that in the fartheſt part of the Highlands, there was a moſt remarkable cock, with two ſurpriſing horns growing out of the back of his head, in the poſſeſſion of an old woman, who was famous for the *ſecond ſight*; that upon his admiring the creature, the woman had offered to ſell it to him for a pound of tobacco and a bottle of brandy, but he was afraid to meddle with it, as the country ſaid it was her *familiar*, though he had ſeen it himſelf ſcrape the dunghill, and tread the hens, like any other cock: and that upon hearing the news, he was come

to

to inform his lordſhip of it, and to offer his ſervice to go all the way himſelf for the bird, and bring him up if he would promiſe to reimburſe him the expences of his journey, and give him ſome little conſideration for his trouble; and to convince his lordſhip, that he had no deſign to impoſe upon him, he would go, at his own hazard, and deſire nothing if he did not ſucceed.

The firſt mention of ſuch a curioſity threw the virtuoſo into the higheſt rapture: he embraced the fellow, conjured him not to loſe a minute, nor drop the leaſt ſyllable of the affair to any perſon living, till he had brought him the cock: and, to ſecure his fidelity, pulled out his purſe, and gave him ten guineas, with a promiſe of fifty more, the moment he ſhould receive him. The man promiſed him every thing he required, and went away, hugging himſelf in the ſucceſs of his ſcheme. Accordingly, he left that part of the country directly, and, taking care to keep beyond the reach of his lordſhip's enquiry, followed his buſineſs as uſual, for the time that he might be thought to have ſpent in his expedition. In the mean while, the virtuoſo could not conceal the pride of his heart, on the proſpect of ſo great an acquiſition; but in all his letters to his philoſophical correſpondents gave myſterious hints of ſomething immenſely fine, rare, and unnatural, and aſſumed the importance due to the poſſeſſion of ſuch a treaſure.

At length the moment arrived that he was to complete his happineſs. About ten o'clock at night the man alighted at his lordſhip's gate, and ſending in his name, was immediately ſhewn into the muſæum, where his lordſhip flew to meet him, in the utmoſt impatience. As ſoon as the man entered, all over ſpattered with dirt, and putting on every appearance of fatigue, 'Well my good friend,' ſaid the virtuoſo, with the greateſt eagerneſs, 'what ſucceſs? Where is the dear creature? Shall I 'be ſo happy as to ſee him in my poſſeſſion?'—'My 'lord,' anſwered the man, 'I muſt beg your pardon 'for a moment, I am not able to ſpeak: I am quite 'worn out'—and then dropping upon a chair, as if he

was

was juſt ready to faint, his lordſhip immediately rting for ſome cordial for him, which he took from the ſervant himſelf at the door, (for he would not admit any one living) and gave him with his own hand. When he was a little recovered, 'I beg your lordſhip's pardon,' continued he, 'but I could not hold out a moment longer: 'what with travelling all day, and watching all night, 'I am quite worn out.'—'But where is the bird?'—'And then ſuch offers as I have refuſed! Well, to be 'ſure, I truſted to your lordſhip's generoſity, for I ſhall 'never have ſuch another opportunity of making my 'fortune: for behold the thing had taken wind, and 'there was my lord duke's and Sir Thomas's men, 'and twenty more, riding for life, to try who ſhould 'get him, but I had got the ſtart of them, and was 'coming back with the pretty creature in my boſom; 'but I let them all go on their fool's errand, and did 'not ſay any thing to them, for how did I know but 'they might kill me, to get him away from me?' Having finiſhed his ſpeech, which the other did not chuſe to interrupt, though he liſtened to it with the utmoſt impatience, the fellow opened his horſeman's coat, and with the greateſt caution produced the wonderful creature, the head and neck of which had been carefully thruſt into a box made on purpoſe, for fear the coat ſhould rub off the horns,

His lordſhip's rapture at the ſight is not to be deſcribed. He inſtantly pulled out his purſe and paying down the promiſed price, took poſſeſſion of him, and bid the man go and refreſh himſelf for that night, with the beſt in the houſe, and in the morning he would conſider how he might make him a return more equal to his ſervice, by procuring him ſome handſome place at court. But the fellow had other deſigns in his head than ever to ſee his face more. However, he kept that to himſelf, and retiring, with many profeſſions of gratitude, left his houſe directly, and took his leave of that country for ever.

In the mean time, his lordſhip had notice that ſupper

was

was ſerved up; but, though he had company the firſt of rank in his houſe, he was ſo wrapt up in the contemplation of his new acquiſition, that he ſent word he was taken ſuddenly ill, and could not poſſibly attend them: he then diſpatched ſeveral ſervants expreſs to his learned friends, to deſire their attendance next day to ſee the moſt aſtoniſhing and beautiful compoſition nature had ever made in the animal world, and devoted the reſt of the night to the drawing up a proper deſcription of this ſurpriſing *horned cock*, with a phyſical enquiry into the ſubſtance of his horns, and a philoſophical attempt to account for ſuch an extraordinary production. When this work of uncommon learning was finiſhed, he indulged himſelf with taking another view of his darling bird, and then put him in a beautiful cage, from which he diſlodged two Chineſe pheaſants, and placed him in his muſæum, next to his favourite horned owl.

It was ſix in the morning before he retired to reſt; when his head was ſo full of his new acquiſition, that he lay dreaming of cows with wings, and cocks with horns, and ſuch like wonderful works of nature, till the arrival of his learned friends at noon. As ſoon as their arrival was announced, he aroſe directly, and without waiting to viſit his cock, to whom he had given a ſufficiency of proviſions before he left him, went to meet them. After ſeveral impatient enquiries into the cauſe of ſo ſudden and peremptory a ſummons, the virtuoſo, in all the myſterious importance, which ſo ineſtimable an acquiſition gave him, produced his own learned labours of that morning, and when they had ſufficiently ſtudied and examined them, introduced them to a ſight of the unparalleled ſubject: 'There, gentlemen,' ſaid he, in conſcious exultation, 'there, my friends, behold the moſt 'uncommon, unnatural, and ineſtimable curioſity, that 'ever enriched the collection of a philoſopher. There 'behold an indiſputable proof of their error, who aſſert 'that nature has placed an immoveable boundary between 'the quadruped and winged creations. There behold 'a ſufficient encouragement, to urge your indefatigable

'ſearch

'search for monsters, and to mix the whole animal cre-
'ation in coition, for the production of mermaids, grif-
'fins, centaurs, harpies, and horned cocks, and all that
'beautiful confusion which yield such inexpressible de-
'light to an inquisitive, philosophic mind.'

While he was making this harangue, the company approached the gilded cage, that contained this inestimable prodigy, and stooping down to contemplate him, were surprised to find one of his horns fallen off, and the other moved considerably from the situation in which it had been described to them: for doleful to relate, the cock, which was of the right game breed, had unfortunately taken offence at the visage of the owl his neighbour, and in his struggles to come at him, through the bars of the cage, had rubbed off one, and displaced the other of his horns. When this deplorable misfortune was mentioned to the owner, it is impossible to describe his astonishment and confusion. He stooped hastily to be satisfied of the truth of it, and beholding the irreparable ruin of his pride, gave one dismal groan, and fell at his length on the floor, in a swoon.

While his servants, who were summoned upon the occasion, were fetching him to himself, one of the philosophers opened the cage, and taking out the bird, they all entered into a discussion of so strange a phænomenon. After many learned and ingenious solutions, one of them declared, that it had always been his opinion, in which the present case abundantly confirmed him, that all cornuted animals cast their horns every year, like the stag, and that the present case was no more than that; of which he was perfectly convinced, as he could plainly feel, with his finger, the growing horn, which had thus thrust off the old one; 'so that, my lord,' said he, addressing himself to the owner, who by this time was recovered, and attending to their remarks, 'Instead of being
'vexed at such an event, you have reason to rejoice, as
'it explains a very difficult point, and you will now have
'an opportunity of tracing the growth of this beautiful
'prodigy.'

The

The ſage ſolution adminiſtered ſome conſolation to the virtuoſo, who immediately took the bird in his own hands, and feeling the lump of wax, which had faſtened on the fictitious horn, was convinced of the truth of his friend's accurate obſervation, which he himſelf farther confirmed, by taking notice, that as no blood followed the avulſion, it was evident that the horn was of itſelf ready to fall off, without the aſſiſtance of the cock's ſtruggling (for they had caught him at that work) as the diſlocation of the other horn, ſhewed that that was not in the ſame ſtate of ripeneſs, and, therefore, it had reſiſted that force. Conſciouſneſs of the ſagacity of this remark, in ſome degree, reſtored his ſpirits, and he was going to proceed, when one of the company, who had taken up and examined the fallen horn, and had not given any opinion on the matter, interrupted him dryly, and ſaid, that the hypotheſis was certainly very ingenious, but he believed the affair might be ſolved a readier way; for, upon examination of the ſuppoſed horn, he found it was only a cock's ſpur, which had been faſtened upon the creature's head with wax, as appeared evidently by the remains of the wax, upon the end of the ſpur in his hand; and, if they would let him pull off the other, he would undertake that the impoſture would be too plain to admit of any doubt.

The mention of this threw them all into confuſion, as they had all given their opinions, poſitively, of the honour of which it deprived them, and cut ſhort many more, which they were ready to offer: they, therefore, ſtood looking at each other, till he ſtretched out his hand to pull off the other horn, when they all interpoſed, particularly the owner, and inſiſted that they muſt be better ſatisfied of what he had advanced, before they could permit ſo raſh an experiment. But the bird himſelf cut ſhort the diſpute; for ſome of the company happening to have ſnuff in their fingers, it got into the cock's eyes, and made him ſhake his head with ſuch violence, that off flew the horn in the owner's face. The perſon who had made the diſcovery, immediately took it up, and

ſhewed ſuch plain proof of the trick, that it could no longer be denied.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the ſhame and vexation in every philoſophic face preſent, at this lamentable event. The abuſed purchaſer, in particular, was almoſt mad: however, after mature deliberation, it was agreed upon, for the credit of philoſophy, to bear the deceit in ſilence, rather than expoſe themſelves to the ridicule of the unlearned, by ſeeking ſatisfaction from the cheat. As for the cock, he was immediately ſacrificed to *Æſculapius*, to avert the conſequences which ſuch a diſappointment might have upon the health and underſtanding of the company, and to remove ſuch an evidence of their diſgrace. But all their caution was in vain: the perſon who firſt detected the deceit, could not deny his vanity the pleaſure of making his ſagacity known; and the fellow, finding his trick paſſed over thus with impunity, could not avoid boaſting of it; and to this day diverts his cuſtomers with the hiſtory of the horned cock.

CHAP. XVII.

More mortification to human vanity. A reaſon for ſubmitting to be pillaged by ſharpers. What's got over the devil's back is ſpent under his belly. Filial piety remarkably rewarded.

I See you are ſhocked at the inconſiſtency, vices, and folly of mankind; but this is owing to your recluſe life, and want of acquaintance with the world? To an accurate obſerver, things appear in their proper colours; and, if the picture ſhould be unpleaſing, the fault is in the ſubject, not in the painter, who honeſtly repreſents nature as he finds her. As to thoſe, of whom I have given you theſe ſhort ſketches, they are wealthy, and wealth is an excuſe for all things; the nobility of their birth not yielding a greater ſanction to their perſons, than their money does to their vices, and follies. And where theſe tend to the diſſipation of that wealth, they only enhance their welcome, in every place of polite reſort: indeed, the ſociety, in which you ſee them at preſent aſſembled,

aſſembled, ſubſiſts entirely by theſe, as by the inſtitution of it, no perſon can be admitted who has not wealth to diſſipate; as no perſon will deſire to be admitted, who has not a vicious avarice for the wealth of others, and folly enough to hazard his own for the aqcuiſition of it.

But, though folly is, in the ſtrictneſs of truth, thus eſſential to this aſſociation, there are many of the members, who, in the general meaning of the word, are entirely above the imputation of it: yet ſo prevalent is the infatuation of gaming, that they will bear the groſſeſt impertinences, and mix with the outcaſts of humanity, for its gratification, as if the dice, like death, levelled all diſtinctions.

Obſerve that perſon, who ſeems to be abſorbed in thought, in the midſt of the hurricane around him. Reaſon takes the advantage of his being for a moment diſengaged, and forces him to behold, in a proper light, a ſcene ſo contrary to *the œconomy of human life*, as that in which he is involved; but wait till the dice-box comes round to him, and you will ſee all his philoſophy vaniſh, and his paſſion for gaming hurry him as deſtructive lengths as the moſt thoughtleſs of them all.

Every ability, every virtue that could adorn and exalt the human mind, conſpired to throw the brighteſt luſtre around his youth, and mark him as a bleſſing to ſociety. Nor did he diſappoint the general hope, but filled with dignity and honour, the high employments to which his merits raiſed him, till this pernicious paſſion inſenſibly unbent his mind, and turned his thoughts from every nobler purſuit. The falling off was moſt unhappy: his time, every moment of which is precious to the public is waſted in idle diſſipation, or devoted to pleaſures, deſtructive to his fortune, which thus falls a prey to ſharpers, while the induſtrious, honeſt tradeſman calls in vain for payment at his door.

Yet, even in this improvidence, the natural virtue of his heart ſometimes appears, in a manner that ſoftens the ſeverity of cenſure. Some years ago, when he filled one of the moſt important places of the ſtate, in a neigh-

bouring nation, he had notice given him, that a ſet of ſharpers, diſguiſed with the moſt delicate and ſpecious art, had entered into a combination againſt him; but inſtead of profiting by the friendly caution, and avoiding them, he ſeemed to throw himſelf, on purpoſe, into the ſnares laid for him, till they had pillaged him of ſums of money, ſufficient to diſtreſs the greateſt fortune.

As it was known, that he had been forewarned of their ſchemes, his conduct was aſtoniſhing to all: but he vindicated it, by ſaying, that the wretches had put themſelves to a conſiderable expence, and travelled a great way to accompliſh their deſign; if he had diſappointed which, they muſt either have ſtarved or robbed, perhaps from thoſe who might not be able to bear the loſs, and then have been hanged: ſo that he looked upon it as a charity, in a double ſenſe, to ſubmit to be cheated by them, and in the ſame manner does he ſtill vindicate his gaming, with perſons ſo notorious for their villainies, that it is almoſt infamous to ſpeak to them.

At his left hand, you ſee a perſon, with an heap of gold before him, which he diſſipates with ſuch eagerneſs, that he ſeems deſirous to be poor. His father heaped up that wealth, with an avidity that was a diſgrace to human nature. The groans of the diſtreſſed, the tears of the orphan and the widow, which he hoarded with his riches, now eat them like a canker; and the gold that he wrung from the hard hands of the poor, melts in the poſſeſſion of his ſpendthrift heir, like ſnow before the ſun. Nor was the ſordidneſs of his heart, in abſtaining from the moſt neceſſary uſe of his riches, inferior to his iniquity in acquiring them. He denied himſelf the very neceſſaries of life, and literally lived in the moſt abject poverty, for fear of being poor. To this perverſe diſpoſition does the perſon you ſee, in a great meaſure, owe his inheriting his wealth; for he had an elder brother, whom the miſer had always deſigned to be his heir, till an ill-timed act of filial piety loſt him his favour.

The old man had an ailment in his leg, which, for want of proper and timely care, had grown to ſuch a

degree

degree of malignancy, that it at length became abſolutely neceſſary to cut it off, in order to ſave his life. Terrible as the apprehenſion of ſuch an operation muſt be, the expence of it gave him ſtill greater concern. To have it done, therefore, in the cheapeſt manner, he made his eldeſt ſon diſguiſe himſelf in a mean dreſs, and take a lodging for him in a garret, in one of the obſcureſt corners of the town, whither he removed himſelf by night, and under the character of a poor tradeſman, ſent for a ſurgeon, who lived in that neighbourhood, and advertiſed his ſkill at the loweſt price. His ſon, whoſe near proſpect of ſuch an immenſe inheritance did not efface his filial duty and affection, was ſhocked at ſuch an inſtance of avarice, and, though he dared not contradict, was reſolved to counteract it. Accordingly, when he was ſent for the ſurgeon (for his father had not revealed his retreat to any of his ſervants, for obvious reaſons) inſtead of going to the quack, as he was directed, he went to one of the moſt eminent ſurgeons of the age, and revealing the whole affair to him, prevailed on him, for a large gratification, to diſguiſe himſelf, and undertake to perform the operation, for whatever trifle ſhould be offered him; and then told his father, with an appearance of joy, that as he was going for the advertiſing ſurgeon, he had luckily met, in an alehouſe where he was directed to inquire for him, a perſon who had been many years a ſurgeon's mate on board a man of war, who he was ſure would cut off his leg, not only much better, but cheaper alſo, as his appearance ſhewed that he was ſtarving, and muſt be glad to take whatever he could get.

Such a lucky hit raiſed the old man's ſpirits, ſo that he ſubmitted to the operation without farther concern, which was performed in ſo maſterly a manner, that, in a fit of unwonted generoſity, he gave the ſurgeon half a guinea, though he had bargained with him for a crown; but then he comforted himſelf, when he began afterwards to reflect upon his extravagance, that he could ſtop it out of the fees for his attendance. In the ſame manner as he had impoſed a good ſurgeon upon him, did his

unfaſhionable ſon ſupply him with all things neceſſary for his condition, by making a woman, in whom he could confide, bring them every day, as if from a lady of fortune, a patient of the ſurgeon's, to whom he had repreſented him as an object of charity; for, if he had had no other ſupport but what he allowed himſelf, he muſt have periſhed for want of proper nouriſhment. When his cure was completed by this management, and he came to diſcharge the ſurgeon, after lamenting his inability to make a more ſuitable return, he offered him a couple of guineas; but the ſurgeon not thinking it neceſſary to carry on the deceit any longer, now the end was anſwered, told him that he need make no apology, for his ſon had already given him two hundred.—'My ſon 'Sir! I do not underſtand you,' anſwered the wretch, in the moſt violent agitations of ſurpriſe, confuſion, and rage. 'Yes, Sir,' replied the ſurgeon, addreſſing him by his name, and telling his own, 'your ſon, to whom 'you are indebted for your life more ways than one; 'for, it was he that ſupplied you with the things which 'you imagined to have been ſent you out of charity.'—

Shocking as this diſcovery was, the old miſer recovered preſence of mind to carry it off in an admirable manner. 'Sir,' ſaid he, 'I have a proper ſenſe of my ſon's duty, 'and of your ſkill in your profeſſion; though you have 'prevented me from making an acknowledgment of them 'in the manner I intended: for you muſt not think that 'I have been deceived; I knew you all along: and I 'removed to this place, and took this method of conceal-'ing myſelf, both to avoid the trouble and impertinence 'of viſitors and complimentary meſſages, and to make 'trial of my ſon's duty; of which I have now had a ſuf-'ficient proof.'—Saying this, he took the ſurgeon by the hand, and accepted his offer of continuing to attend him till his wound ſhould be quite healed, with the greater readineſs, as he was paid already; but to his ſon he behaved in a different manner; for he directly made a new will, by which he bequeathed his immenſe fortune to the next brother, the perſon before us, leaving

ing the other to pine out his days in poverty, on a poor annuity, *in reward for his obedience and duty*, (in the very words of his will) an injuſtice that was farther aggravated, by his having made him relinquiſh the moſt promiſing hopes of riſing in the army, and reſign his commiſſions, ſome time before, merely to attend upon him. Such a ſhock was almoſt too great for human fortitude: the injured gentleman ſunk under it; happy in eſcaping from a world, where the higheſt virtues are deſpiſed, if deſtitute of wealth.

As for the heir, it was his good fortune to be bred at ſuch a diſtance from his father, that he had no opportunity of making any obſervations on him, and therefore, as the miſer could not carry his wealth with him out of the world, he even left it to him; though, could he have foreſeen the ſcene before us, he would ſooner have bequeathed it to charitable uſes, to enrich overſeers, and ſtarve the poor, than give it to ſuch a ſpendthrift.

I ſee your ſenſes fail under ſuch an extraordinary exertion, I ſhall therefore cloſe this ſcene with obſerving, that the whole company may be characterized under the few I have pointed out to you. In this view of them, I choſe to take the ſilent moment, when their buſineſs was near over: for, in the height of it, the agitation of ſuch complicated paſſions would have been too horrible for repreſentation.

CHAP. XVIII.

Chryſal gives a farther account of his late lord. The methods by which he had been initiated in the myſteries of polite life. Some ſketches of the character of his next maſter, who gives him to an extraordinary perſon.

I PROMISED to give you ſome account of my *late* lord. He was the ſon of one of the moſt diſtinguiſhed perſons of his age, who had acquired a fortune in the ſervice of his country, ſufficient to ſupport, with proper dignity, the nobility with which his faithful zeal was rewarded by his grateful ſovereign.

The youth of his ſon opened with ſuch promiſing hopes, that it was expected he would advance, in the

ſteps

ſteps of his father, to the higheſt rank of a ſubject.—To facilitate theſe hopes, at his return from his travels, in which he had not only gone to ſee, but had alſo taken time to conſider, the principal countries of Europe, with thoſe of Africa and Aſia, whoſe intereſts might any way affect thoſe of his own, or whoſe hiſtory, illuſtrated thus by obſervation, might teach him to improve the advantages of his own country, and avoid the evils which had been the ruin of others, he was placed in the lower houſe of the ſenate, with every advantage of fortune, intereſt, and opinion, to ſupport the exertion of his abilities.

He had ſcarce made himſelf known here, in his proper light, when the death of his father raiſed him into the upper houſe, where he ſoon eſtabliſhed a weight that made him of real conſequence to the nation, and alarmed the fears of the miniſtry, who, as they could not confute, reſolved to corrupt him, if poſſible; for which end, the deepeſt ſchemes were put in practice, to relax his morals, and embarraſs his fortune, as the preſent ſituation of both raiſed him above their attempts.

It would require uncommon virtue to reſiſt the temptaions to vice, in an age whoſe refinements have taken off every groſſneſs, and almoſt every horror of its appearance. His regard was won, by a moſt delicate application to that vanity, which is too often the ſhadow of merit, eſpecially in youth; the very perſons who deſigned to change his principles, ſeeming to give up theirs to the ſuperior force of his reaſon.

Such artifice ſoon won the confidence of his unguarded heart, and inclined it to receive their opinions and advice, without farther examination: as the heat of youth and a vivid imagination aſſiſted their deſigns againſt his fortune, the ſucceſs of which was in itſelf a ſufficient reward.

He had always expreſſed a diſlike to *play*, nor ever gave into it, but in complaiſance to company. To conquer this averſion was therefore their laſt labour, in which they found eaſier ſucceſs than they could have

even

even hoped for. The affluence of his fortune made him above apprehenſion of loſs, and a diſdain to be excelled, even in an art he diſapproved, engaged him with a keenneſs, that ſoon made his advances in the art a pleaſure to him.

The work was now done; and a few years of his own induſtry, with the aſſiſtance of his friends, and the management of his faithful ſteward, made him willing to enter into the pay of a miniſtry, which he might, in leſs time, have overturned.

This was his ſituation at that time; but ſome ſecret ſtruggles, which I ſaw reaſon and virtue making in his heart, make me think he meditates a revolt from his infatuation, which the leaſt liberty to his natural good ſenſe could not fail to accompliſh; an event, which the rapacity of Poundage muſt haſten, to his own ruin.

The perſon in whoſe poſſeſſion I left the ſcene you have juſt beheld, was one of thoſe who had been ſo ſucceſsful in initiating my late maſter into all the myſteries of pleaſure. Indeed, he ſeemed deſigned by nature to extend its empire over all mankind, making it the ſole object of abilities equal to the moſt exalted purſuits, to invent new, to improve the old methods of gratifying ſenſe, and enforcing his precepts, by an example ſo keen, and a converſation ſo captivating, as not to be reſiſted. Appetites ſo extenſive required a large ſupport; to provide which, for fortune had ſo far frowned upon his birth, that he was but a younger brother, he was compelled to ſteal ſome moments from his darling pleaſures, and ſacrifice them to buſineſs. The intereſt of his family and his own abilities had raiſed him to the firſt employments in the ſtate; but as the ſole motive of his ſubmitting to the reſtraint of any application, was to acquire a fund for the gratification of his pleaſures, his haſte to arrive at that end precipitated him into the moſt deſtructive meaſures, and made him ready and eager to embrace every opportunity of ſacrificing, or rather ſelling, the intereſt of his country for preſent private gain.

The proper application of the gifts of heaven makes them

them a bleſſing. This caſt of his diſpoſition made thoſe abilities, which, under a right direction, would have been of the higheſt ſervice to himſelf and his country, a real prejudice to both, making him the ready and dangerous inſtrument of the moſt enormous crimes, that could promiſe preſent gratification to his paſſions.

In ſuch a life, there muſt neceſſarily be many diſagreeable occurrences, but they made no impreſſion on him; for his whole ſoul is ſo devoted to pleaſure, that upon the leaſt miſcarriage in buſineſs, he finds immediate relief in the return to that, which he can fly to, without any difficulty, the natural vivacity of his temper, that makes his converſation ſo bewitching to others, never yielding to a ſecond moment's vexation at any one event.

As the viper bears in herſelf the antidote of her poiſon, this diſſipation of temper prevents his abilities from doing all the miſchief he otherwiſe might, by pulling off the maſk, and ſhewing his deſigns too ſoon for their accompliſhment. The very perſons, who would gladly avail themſelves of the venality, not daring to truſt to the inconſtancy of his diſpoſition; ſo that he ſoon loſt his greateſt power of doing evil, otherwiſe than by oppoſing, and impeding the meaſures of thoſe, whoſe ſucceſsful honeſty diſappointed his deſigns, and ſhewed the danger of them in its proper light.

You will not imagine, that my ſtay could be long in his poſſeſſion. He that very day gave me to an author, for throwing dirt on the characters of thoſe who had detected and defeated his ſchemes of leading his country into ruin.

CHAP. XIX.

The hiſtory and character of Chryſal's new maſter.—His adventures at a coffee-houſe. The fun of a modern genius retorted upon himſelf, by the grave rebuke of a teſty veteran.

MY new maſter was a votary of Apollo, in the double capacity of phyſic and letters: for, the former not affording ſcope enough for his genius, he uſu-

ally

ally dedicated his leiſure hours to the gentler entertainments of the latter, through the extenſive circle of which he had occaſionally ran; there not being a branch in the wide world of ſcience which had not felt his pruning: the loweſt rudiments of the moſt vulgar arts being, in his opinion, no more beneath the philoſophic pen, than the moſt abſtruſe heights of ſpeculation.

It muſt be owned, that, in ſuch a latitude of ſtudy, he often was obliged to proſtitute his labours; but for this he had the ſolid conſolation, that his gain generally roſe in proportion as his ſubject ſunk, the caprice of the world paying beſt, that is, buying moſt eagerly, what it affected to decry moſt. Nor is this to be wondered at, a looſe tale, or a receipt for cooking a new diſh, being better adapted to general taſte, than a moral eſſay, or metaphyſical ſpeculation.

From his patron's levee, my maſter went directly home, and, undreſſing into his cap and ſlippers, aſcended into his ſtudy, and took a meditative turn or two, revolving in his mind the many grievances that called upon him for redreſs, from the ſucceſs of that morning.

At length burſting into a rapture, he cried, 'I'll 'think no more! Be the wants of yeſterday forgot! 'thoſe of to-morrow will come too ſoon, without the 'anticipation of thought! I cannot pay all I owe! I 'cannot provide all I want! Hence, then, vain care! 'I'll depend on fortune, and myſelf, for a greater ſup-'ply another day, and indulge my genius with the pre-'ſent.'—Big with this heroic reſolution, he gave orders for dinner, and then, ſending for his beſt ſuit home, he dreſſed himſelf in all his pride, and went to a coffee-houſe to look at the papers.

The pleaſure of *my* company had given ſuch a flow to his ſpirits, naturally high, that he ſoon drew the attention of the coffee-room, the greater part of the company gathering in a circle round him, to hear his remarks on the publications of the day, which he threw out with the confidence of one, who thought his opinion the eſtabliſhed ſtandard of all writing; and at the ſame time,

with a ſprightlineſs that made his very impudence and abſurdity entertaining.

While he was thus running on, in the torrent of harangue, a *veteran*, whoſe only employment, for many years, was talking over the actions of his youth, and comparing them to the miſtakes and loſſes of the preſent times, no longer able to contain his rage, at having his audience drawn from him, in the midſt of his daily tale, roſe up with an execration that ſhook the room, and called for his cloak and cane. 'This is not to be borne,' exclaimed he. 'Here, waiter, take for my coffee! I 'ſhall ſtay in ſuch a place no longer: this is the land 'of freedom, forſooth! that a man muſt be diſturbed in 'his diſcourſe, and not have liberty to ſpeak where he 'ſpends his money? Had I but the command here, 'I'd ſettle other orders; every prating puppy ſhould 'not preſume to interrupt his betters: things are like 'to go well with us, when matters of the higheſt con-'ſequence can be broken in upon by noiſe and nonſenſe. 'This is freedom with a vengeance.'

The look and accent with which theſe words were pronounced, were too terrible for my maſter to encounter; both nature and experience having given him ſo lively an apprehenſion of danger, that his readieſt preſence of mind was not always able to conceal it. He was, therefore, cut ſhort at once, and could ſcarce muſter ſpirits to throw a wink at ſome of thoſe about him, as the *man of war* looked another way.

But the triumph was not ſo abſolute over all the company, one of whom, reſolving to have ſome *fun*, cries out, 'Pray, doctor, proceed; you are juſt in the moſt 'intereſting part of your ſtory: the colonel could not 'mean to interrupt you; he is too fond of telling his 'own ſtory to give another ſuch pain: go on, you 'ſhould not be frighted at a flaſh in the pan.'

'Frighted indeed,' replied the doctor, gathering courage when he ſaw himſelf ſupported, 'at what, I 'wonder! at the ſight of what old age can ſink to; no, 'no, I am not ſo eaſily frighted! I leave that to

'your

'your antiquated heroes, the exploits of whose youth 'have exhausted their courage: I mean no offence; but 'to go on, as I was saying, *the discovery of the sleep of* '*plants accounts in the clearest manner*'—'Hold, doc- 'tor,' cries the other, 'that was not *as you were say-* '*ing*, you were telling us of the nobleman, who caught 'his coachman in bed with his lady, one morning, 'when he came home, sooner than usual from the ta- 'vern; pray how did she bring herself off?'

'Oh, was that it,' replied the doctor, 'faith I had 'forgot; the fury of Mars had like to have made a 'gap in the annals of Venus: ha! ha! ha! why she 'made nothing of it, but laughing in his face, most he- 'roically, *tit for tat*, my dear, is but fair play,' said she, 'while I say nothing at your staying out night after 'night with *Kitty*, you cannot in conscience blame my 'comforting myself a little with *John*.'

The colonel stood all this while convulsed with rage, too big for utterance; but the universal laugh, that followed the doctor's last words, rousing him, he advanced to him, 'Whom do you dare to laugh at, *poul-* '*tron?*' says he, taking him by the nose, 'whose 'courage is exhausted? But you are beneath my notice 'or resentment, farther than this:' then spitting full in his face, he turned to the gentleman who had set the doctor on, and who began now not to like the joke any farther, 'But, for you, Sir! you perhaps may be a 'gentleman, worth calling to a further account! Will 'you please to walk up stairs with me, and let me 'know what you mean by a flash in the pan?'

The ceremonies of attending him, on such an expedition, would not have been much more agreeable to this gentleman than to my master, but he had more command of his fear, and was well used to bring himself off with a joke. 'Sir,' says he, 'you need not give 'yourself the trouble of going up stairs, for what I can 'as well do here! By bidding the doctor not be fright- 'ed, I meant at the circumstance of his own story, for 'just as you interrupted him, he had said, the lord

'snapped

Bayerische Staatsbibliothek München

'ſnapped a piſtol at his lady, which had flaſhed in the 'pan! That was all, Sir! I could never mean it to of- 'fend you, or ſhew a doubt of your courage, which I 'have heard you relate ſo many ſurpriſing inſtances of, 'ſo often, and always ſo invariably alike, that they 'muſt be true.'

'Sir! Sir! have a care,' replied the colonel, 'I do 'not deſire to be troubled with ſuch a gentleman as I 'perceive you are! But let me tell you, Sir, that I 'have ſeen a man's face broke before now, for wearing 'ſuch a ſneer! As to the ſtories I tell, I am ſatisfied 'they will be of no ſervice to you, nor raiſe the leaſt 'emulation in a man who can ſtay lounging about town, 'when his country has occaſion for him. I was youn- 'ger than you when I went a volunteer with Lord Cutts, 'under the Duke of Marlborough; nor was I urged by 'want; I had a good eſtate, Sir, ſufficient to ſupply me 'with what you call the pleaſures of life, if I could 'have thought any thing a pleaſure that was not at- 'tended with honour. Sir, I loſt this hand at Blen- 'heim, and this leg at Malplaquet! But why do I 'tell You! you will preſerve your hands to take ſnuff; 'and your legs to walk the park, the proper ſcene of 'your campaigns.'—With which words the doughty hero marched away to his chariot.

Though this lecture was rather too grave for the taſte of the perſon to whom it was addreſſed, it gave great pleaſure to the unconcerned part of the company, and to none more than my maſter, who had wiped his face, and began to come to himſelf as ſoon as he ſaw the danger directed another way.

Before the gentleman could ſpeak, the doctor came up to him, and ſaid, 'I am ſorry, Sir, that you ſhould 'have drawn this ſtorm upon yourſelf, upon my account! 'But I bore the worſt of it! You heard but the whiſt- 'ling of the winds, the ſhower fell on me! 'Tis well 'though, that what ſuch dotards do is not eſteemed an 'affront!'—'An affront, Sir,' replied the other, 'I 'do not underſtand you! I hope you do not inſinuate,

'that

'that there was any affront offered to me, or that I was 'in the leaſt concerned at what was ſaid, only to you!' —'Not at all, Sir,' returned the doctor, 'not at all, 'Sir! the colonel's diſcourſe was all directed to me, to 'be ſure; and I hope to profit by it, thus far, that I 'will never interrupt him again!' And with theſe words he left his former friend the field, not caring to enter into any farther altercation with him, for fear he might take it into his head to vindicate his character on *him*, as *he knew his man*.

Such ſlight rebuffs made not a moment's impreſſion on the temper of my maſter: he was uſed to, and made nothing of them! A good dinner, and a bottle of wine, ſent him in the evening, in a critical enthuſiaſm, to the theatre, where all action fell ſhort of the ſublimity of his conception, all expreſſion, of the warmth of his feeling, as he fully explained to every company in the coffee-houſe, while he ſat at public ſupper, after the play was done.

CHAP. XX.

Some further account of Chryſal's maſter. His converſation and engagements with two bookſellers. Some of the ſecrets of the trade. Chryſal changes his ſervice.

EXTENSIVE as theſe ſcenes were, they ſhewed not my maſter in his proper light. His peculiar ſphere was his ſtudy, where the inconſiſtency of his work, ſhewed the *chaos* in the brain, from whence they ſprung. *Chaos*, did I ſay! *Chaos* is order to the confuſion there. For ſurely the diſcordant ſeeds of ſuch ill matched things were never jumbled together before. An auctioneer's library is a regular ſyſtem, in compariſon to his head. Such an heap has neither beginning nor end. No fixed point to commence a deſcription from. I ſhall therefore wave ſuch an attempt, and only ſtrive to convey ſome idea of it, from its effects.

At five the next morning he aroſe to his labours, the firſt of which was to conſider what he ſhould begin the day with, ſuch was the multitude he had in hand. But what reaſon could not determine, chance muſt, and he

took them as they happened to lie, *panegyric*, *libel*, *phyſic*, *divinity*, *cookery*, *criticiſm*, *politics*, *ballads*, *botany*, &c. &c. &c. In all of which he indefatigably worked the taſk of the day, changing his ſubject with as little concern as he did his paper: and though ſuch rambling prevented his ever getting deeper than the ſurface of any ſubject, yet it ſhewed the extent and volubility of his capacity, and that it wanted only regular application to any ſcience, to be eminent in it.

As ſoon as he had finiſhed and the *devils* had carried away his labours, he was juſt deſcending to go out, when a bookſeller came to pay him a viſit. After much ceremony on one ſide, and little civility on the other, Mr. Vellum thus accoſted my maſter: 'Well, Sir, I ſee there 'is no dependence on the word of an author! I thought 'I was to have the anſwer to yeſterday's pamphlet laſt 'night: ſomebody elſe will do it, and then I ſhall be 'finely off.'

'Upon my honour, Sir,' replied my maſter, 'I aſſure 'you I ſhould have done it, but ſome buſineſs'—'What 'buſineſs can you have, that ſhould interfere a moment 'with your engagements with me?'—'Dear Mr. Vel-'lum, do but hear me! There is a noble lord going 'to be divorced for impotence; I juſt got a hint of the 'matter, the night before laſt, and ſo waited upon his 'lordſhip's gentleman yeſterday morning, with whom I 'had a particular intimacy, having ſerved him in my 'profeſſion more than once; and from him I have learned 'the whole ſtory, and now leave me to ſet it out! I'll 'engage to make a noble eighteen-pennyworth of it, at 'leaſt by to-morrow morning.'—'Why, there may be 'ſomething in that; but in the mean time you ſhould 'not let other matters cool!'—'Never fear, pray how did 'yeſterday's pamphlet do?'—'Why tolerably well; but 'the ſcandal was ſo groſs, that I was almoſt afraid.'—'Aye! aye! never fear me for an home cut; never fear 'me!'—'But I hear nothing of the exercitations!'—'No; *I ſent* away the ſheet above an hour ago!'—'Then 'there's that book you promiſed to re-write; ſome one

elſe

'else will do it, and prevent you.'—'Never fear, I have 'just laid down a scale for the style; besides, I have 'altered the title already, and that you know is the prin- 'cipal thing.'—'That is right! Now you speak of 'titles, I want half a dozen directly! this very day, if 'possible!'—'It is rather too late now, but where are 'the books!'—'In the lumber garret, where they have 'lain these seven years.'—'That's well; they are forgot 'by this.'—'Forgot! why they were never known! 'The author was a man of fortune, who printed them at 'his own expence, but I prevented the sale, and so had 'them for the publishing! Ha! ha! ha! beside a good 'consideration for buying up at a double price what I 'had *(not)* sold of them; so that it was not a bad job; 'and now he is dead, they may safely come out under 'new titles! It will be too great a delay to wait to see 'them, but here are the old titles, which I suppose may 'do.'—'Why, aye; they may do; but I cannot pos- 'sibly write them this evening; you know I must answer 'that pamphlet I wrote last week, before it is forgot; 'I have an answer ready, that will make a noise; I ex- 'pect it will raise a curiosity that will sell another edi- 'tion of the pamphlet. I left openings for such retorts 'upon the characters I praised in that, and have such 'pieces of secret history to hit them off with, that I'll 'engage for the success.'—'Aye, secret history, and 'stories of familiar misfortunes, and such like, may do 'something. But I had like to have forgot the main 'business of my coming. There is an account of the 'death of an eminent divine, this morning: could we 'not vamp up a volume or two of sermons for him, 'think you? He was suspected of heresy and atheism, 'and you know, that would make any thing in his name 'go off.'—'Egad, a good thought! and particularly 'lucky at this time: for, as I have been engaged in di- 'vinity lately, I know the weak sides of the question, 'and a little infidelity will be a refreshment to me. It 'shall be done! the sermons shall be ready without delay! 'Have you not got some by you that did not go off: let

'me have one of each, and I'll interline them to ſave 'time; but will you publiſh them yourſelf? I thought 'you had given up ſermons!'—'Myſelf! no! no! I'll 'ſend them in to Mr. Vamp. I'll reſerve the confutation 'of them to myſelf!'—'Egad, another good thought; 'the confutation will do better! and I'll take care to 'make it a ſmart one, and play the devil with the author; 'ha, ha, ha. But, Mr. Vellum, your coming here this 'morning prevented my waiting on you: it is a great 'while ſince you promiſed to ſettle with me. You 'ſhould conſider, Sir'—'What pray, good Sir, ſhould 'I conſider? that I have ſupported you!'—'Supported 'me, Mr. Vellum! Sir, I have a profeſſion.'—'I 'know you have, Mr. Doctor; a profeſſion indeed, in 'which his majeſty's ſubjects may bleſs God that nine in 'ten of you would ſtarve, if they had no other way of 'getting bread, beſide that.'—'Mr. Vellum, you know 'this way of talking ſignifies nothing. It is a long time 'ſince we have ſettled any account, and there are a great 'many articles! Let me ſee: aye, here they are! and a 'long liſt it is! *Nineteen pamphlets*, with *anſwers* to '*fourteen* of them; *nine rapes*, *ſix murders*, *five faſt* 'and *four funeral ſermons*, *thirty-ſix eſſays*, *twenty-two* '*titles*, *four quarto volumes re-writ*, *ſeventeen wills*, '*twenty-four*'—'Go on, Sir, go on! but when you 'have done, look at *this*, and talk to me of an account; 'your bond for fifteen pounds, which is due theſe two 'years; and it is very likely, to be ſure, that you ſhould 'leave it out-ſtanding ſo long, if you had any account to ſet 'off againſt it! But I am glad I know you; and ſince you 'talk of accounts, obſerve that I demand my money, 'due on this bond, which I will have, and, when you 'have paid that, it will be time enough for me to ſettle 'accounts with you; ſo, Sir, your ſervant.'—'Mr. 'Vellum, good Mr. Vellum, do not be ſo haſty! I 'did not mean to give you offence.'—'Accounts indeed! 'have I not ſupplied you with paper above the weekly al- 'lowance we agreed for, and yet you will talk to me!'— 'Mr. Vellum, I may be in the wrong; let matters ſtand

'as they are: but you have not told me what ſize you 'would have this affair of the divorce, that I mentioned 'to you juſt now.'—'There it is now; that is your 'way always; you know my eaſy temper, and that you 'can bring me down when you pleaſe: why, if the ſtory 'will bear much printing, and the circumſtances are 'very ſtrong and plain, I believe you may draw it out 'to two ſhillings; and to encourage you, and ſhew 'you that I mean generouſly by you, when you have 'finiſhed *that*, and the *anſwer*, and the *ſermons*, and 'the *confutations*, and the *titles*, and the *exercitations*, 'I will give you up your bond, and then we will begin 'an account on plain even terms. But I am in haſte, 'I have three or four other gentlemen to call upon; I 'ſhall depend upon your promiſe, and ſo good morning.' —'Good morning to you, good Mr. Vellum. Damned, 'impoſing, grinding ſcoundrel; but I'll be quit with 'you, for all your tricks,' ſaid the Doctor, as ſoon as Mr. Vellum was out of the room, 'and teach ſuch 'ſtupid raſcals to tempt outwitting men of genius.'

When I conſidered the nature and importance of my maſter's demand, I could not but wonder at the eaſe with which he took a denial, and the joy he expreſſed at Mr. Vellum's departure; but the myſtery was ſoon cleared up, by the arrival of Mr. Pamplet, another of the trade, almoſt the very moment Vellum went down ſtairs, and whom, I ſaw by his reception, my maſter expected.

If I was before ſhocked at the cruelty with which I thought Vellum treated my maſter, I was not leſs ſo, at the part *he* acted with Pamphlet, with whom he bargained over again for the very ſame *ware* which he before promiſed to Vellum, and flattered him with an aſſurance of having his buſineſs done, that is, the anſwers and re-writing, before Vellum poſſibly could, for they were mortal enemies.

The diſcourſe between theſe was much the ſame as the former, only it was concluded in a different manner; Pamphlet giving my maſter a couple of pieces, to keep him in mind of his engagement.

I was

I was utterly at a loſs to think how he meant to act between theſe two; when he put an end to my doubts by this ſoliloquy. 'So, now I have diſpatched you two, 'the day is my own; keep my engagements! I will, 'with both alike. Let me ſee, there is nothing in it, 'but a little trouble of writing; I can divide the hits 'between both anſwers, according to the opens I have 'left on purpoſe, and ſo ſend them to both at the ſame 'time; only to divide the alterations in my ſcale of ſtyle, 'and make a ſecond title, and ſo it is done. This method 'that I have found, of uſing a feigned name, makes it all 'eaſy. Well, let thoſe who were born to fortunes, ſpend 'them in ſloth and ignorance, I have an eſtate in myſelf, 'that can never be exhauſted. I am obliged to nature 'only, for my abilities, and carry the fountain of ho-'nour and fortune in the fluency of my genius.'

He then deſcended from his aerial citadel, and going out to *viſit* his patients, *changed* me at a coffee-houſe, where I was immediately borrowed at the bar by an officer, who was going to dine with the general, and wanted money to give his ſervants.

CHAP. XXI.

Chryſal enters into the ſervice of the gentleman of a general. Gratitude in high and low life. The modern way of riſing in the world, and the happineſs of dependance. Influence of Chryſal's maſter, with his curious manner of ſupporting it.

YOU may judge that my ſtay with this owner was but ſhort: he gave me directly to the general's *gentleman*, with a letter to be preſented to his excellency next morning, as he could not find courage to ſpeak to him in perſon.

The caſe of this perſon, though not uncommon among men, I own affected me. He was the ſon of an officer of diſtinguiſhed merit, the ſervices of whoſe life had, in the 80th year of it, been rewarded with the command of a regiment, and the hopes of his ſon crowned with a pair of colours; which, on the death of his father, in ſix months after his elevation, he found to be his whole inheritance,

inheritance; the fees of office, and the equipage for his new rank, having exhauſted all the ſavings of the old man's ſubaltern frugality. The moſt exemplary duty, in five warm campaigns, had advanced the ſon to the rank of a lieutenant, when the exaltation of the perſon to whom he now applied, raiſed his hopes to a company, which was vacant in the regiment, and his right by ſeniority; for ſuch was his ignorance of mankind, that he built ſanguine expectations on the very reaſons that ſhould have deprived him of any, *the obligations of the perſons to whom he applied, to his father*, who had taken him up, the poor friendleſs orphan of an enſign, educated him at his own expence, procured him his firſt commiſſion, and afterwards lent him the money with which he had purchaſed his company: a debt which the ſon was weak enough to expect a friendſhip from, though it, and much more, had long ſince been cleared at play.

But, though the character of the ſon, and the general's known intimacy with the father, in a manner obliged him to promiſe him his friendſhip, yet nothing was farther from his thoughts than ever to do him any real ſervice; as he imagined that would be acknowledging the obligations which his very attendance ſeemed to upbraid him with: a dinner now and then being the only favour he ever had, or ever meant, to give him. You may, perhaps, have experienced the miſery of a dependant's dining at the table of his patron, where the tortures of Tantalus are aggravated by anxiety of giving offence. I ſhall therefore haſten over this, and the other ſcenes of that evening, which were but the common occurrences of military greatneſs, and ended in a deep debauch, as ſoon as all but the *choſen few* had retired, to come to the concluſion of my late maſter's ſtory, in which my preſent bore a conſiderable part.

As ſoon as the general had ſlept off the fumes of his wine, and awoke next morning, my maſter's hour of influence arrived, which he never failed to improve. After a prelude of coughing and ſpitting, the ſcene opened thus: 'Who's there? William!'—'Sir.'—'William, was

'not

'not I very drunk laſt night! my head achs moſt con-
'foundedly.'—'Your excellency was a little cut, but
'you broke up much the ſtrongeſt of the company.
—'Aye, I wonder at that, I ſpend myſelf with talking,
'when I begin to go, and that helps a man on damna-
'bly: that ſtory of the battle, where I was taken pri-
'ſoner, is a bottle in my way always.'—'That fo-
'reign gentleman, who never ſpeaks a word, has a great
'advantage then.'—'Aye, ſo he has; but he is a
'damned honeſt fellow, and a very good companion;
'he always fills a bumper, and never ſpeaks a word.—
'But my head.'—'Perhaps your excellency had better
'take ſomething.'—'No, I have taken too much already:
'though that's right; give me a glaſs of the old gene-
'va; I am to go to council to-day, and muſt ſettle my
'head. Aye, that will do, I am much better now;
'there is nothing like a hair of the old dog.'

This converſation continued till he was ſeated to break-faſt, when my maſter turned to a new topic. 'I was very ſorry,' ſaid he 'that your excellency happened to
'ſit in laſt night, as Mrs. Motherly was to call.'—
'Why, that's true; William, I did not think of one
'engagement when I made the other; and, when ſhe
'called me out, I was not in cue; I was too far gone.
'We old fellows are not ſparrows! the ſpirit is often
'willing, when the fleſh is weak; ha, ha, ha.'—'Your
'excellency is pleaſed to be merry, but, to my thinking,
'the youngeſt fellow of the age has not more vigour.'—
'Aye, William do you think ſo indeed? But why do
'you think ſo, William?'—'Becauſe your excellency
'always chooſes ſuch green things: now I ſhould think
'a ripe woman would be better; I am ſure ſhe would
'give leſs trouble.'—'Ha, ha, ha, why that's your
'taſte; but youth is mine, and while I have powers,
'and I do not think mine quite gone yet, I will pleaſe
'my taſte. But what had Mrs. Motherly laſt night?'—
'A very fine girl as your excellency could wiſh to ſee.'
'How old?'—'About ſixteen.'—Pſha, mellow pears!
'I loath ſuch traſh.'—'But Mrs. Motherly ſaid ſhe

'could

'could ſwear ſhe was untouched. She came from the 'country but yeſterday, a relation of her own: the poor 'thing knew nothing of the matter, and thought ſhe 'came to be hired for a laundry maid.'—'Why, that 'is ſomething, but I wiſh ſhe were younger.'—'If your 'excellency pleaſes but to wait a little, I have one in my 'eye, that will ſuit your taſte exactly; a ſweeter child 'is not in all England.'—'Aye, good William,' ſpitting once or twice, and wriggling in his chair, 'Aye, 'that is ſomething, but how old?'—'Juſt ten, and finely 'grown.'—'Right, the right age. That's true! I'll 'ſpeak this very day for that place for your brother. 'Tell him to come to-morrow: I will not be refuſed.'— 'We are both obliged to your excellency for your fa- 'vours.'—'But when ſhall I ſee this girl? Give Mo- 'therly ſome excuſe with her ripe fruit. Sixteen! ſixty! 'pſha!'—'Sir, I ſhall go about it this very evening.— 'A letter from captain Standard; will your excellency 'pleaſe to read it?'—'Damn him and his letter: throw 'it into the fire! What would the unreaſonable ſcoun- 'drel have? Did I not give him his dinner yeſterday? 'Has he not been introduced to good company at my 'table? If he had any induſtry or ſpirit, with theſe 'advantages, he would have learned to play and made 'his fortune, as others do. Since he grows troubleſome 'on encouragement, I'll ſtarve him into better manners. 'Bid the porter ſtrike him off the dinner liſt.— I beg 'your excellency's pardon, for mentioning him; but the 'manner I have heard you talk to him made me imagine 'you really did deſign to provide for him; and he ſays 'there is a vacancy in the regiment juſt now.'—'Damn 'his impudence! a vacancy indeed! I ſhall never think 'there is a good one, till he makes it at Tyburn.'

'I beg your excellency's pardon: I ſhall never men- 'tion him more. Would you have me go about the child 'this evening? It is a little angel to be ſure.'—'This 'moment if you think you can ſucceed.'—'I ſhall try 'at any rate: but there is one obſtacle.'—'What is 'that? You know I never grudge money on theſe occa-

'ſions.

'ſions. How much will do?'—'That is not the diffi-
'culty here; money will not do, and I hardly know
'what will.'—'Money not do! why what the devil can
'it be, that money will not do?'—'I ſcarce know how
'to mention it to your excellency, but the little cherub
'is neice to captain Standard, his ſiſter's daughter, and
'while he is in the way, there will be no poſſibility of
'getting at her.'—'Is that all? Then he ſhall join
'the regiment to-morrow.'—'But then he will leave ſuch
'an impreſſion of your unkindneſs upon his ſiſter, if there
'is nothing done for him, after waiting ſo long, that it
'will be impoſſible for any perſon belonging to you to
'gain acceſs.'

'What would you have me do? I never will bear
'to have the fellow get a company in my regiment:
'that would be acknowledging the obligations he has
'the impudence to ſay I received from his father; I
'never will bear it.'—'I beg your excellency's pardon;
'I did not preſume to point out any ſuch thing; and
'indeed, the poſſeſſion of ſuch a *baby* (though my eyes
'never beheld her fellow) is not worth giving yourſelf
'ſo much trouble about; ſhe is quite too young, though
'ſo well grown.'—'You ſay ſhe is but juſt ten! and
'ſuch a beauty?'—'I wiſh your excellency could but
'ſee her, for I am unable to deſcribe her.'—'But can-
'not ſome way be found out, beſide fixing this fellow
'under my noſe?'—'That was juſt what I was going
'to take the liberty of hinting to your excellency.
'There are ſeveral gentlemen of fortune, in the troops
'juſt ordered to America, who have no liking to the
'voyage. Now I think, with ſubmiſſion, that you
'would oblige ſome of them, with an exchange into your
'regiment, and let captain Standard go in his place.
'And this will oblige him too; for I have often heard
'him wiſh to go there, in hopes of riſing, when they
'come into action.'—'A good thought, and ſo I will.
'Let the fellow go to America and get ſcalped; his hot
'head wants to be cooled: ſuch poor wretches as he are
'juſt fit to be tranſported there. Tell him to prepare

'directly!

'directly! I long to be rid of him. But when ſhall I 'ſee the dear little creature?'

'In twenty-four hours after he is gone, I'll undertake 'to have her eating ſugar-plumbs, and ſobbing in your 'boſom. It cannot poſſibly be ſooner, for you know 'the captain's ſpirit, and that he would cut the throat 'of a prince, who ſhould diſhonour his family, as he 'calls it.'—'Aye, damn his ſpirit, that is true; that 'is what has kept me civil to the fellow ſo long: I 'know he has all the romantic madneſs about honour, 'and ſuch ſtuff, that made his fool of a father live and 'die a beggar.'

By this time his excellency was dreſſed to go to council, for which another dram ſettled his head.

I *ſee* your ſurpriſe at the brutal behaviour of the maſter, and the infamous deſigns of the man. The former is beyond aggravation; but the latter were only an honeſt artifice in favour of his friend, who had no ſuch niece in the world.

CHAP. XXII.

The hiſtory of Mr. William. Some odd circumſtances in his conduct accounted for. By a progreſſion equally polite and frugal. Chryſal comes from his poſſeſſion into that of a celebrated female.

WILLIAM was a ſon of the regiment, born of one of the general wives that followed it. He was about the ſame age with Standard, who had taken ſuch a liking to him, when they were boys, that he ſhared his allowance with him, gave him his old cloaths, and taught him what he had learned at ſchool. A natural acuteneſs of genius improved theſe advantages ſo well, that William could read and write enough for a gentleman, dance, fence, and ſcrape on the violin, before his friend's power of ſerving him was put an end to, by the death of his father, and his ſpirit and appetites were too great to accept of his offer, of the beſt ſupport an enſign could ſpare him, to maintain him as a cadet, till his merit ſhould get him a commiſſion. But, though he would not accept, he did not forget the offer, nor

make his obligations a cauſe of hatred, now that it was in his power to make ſome return; a way of thinking that proved the meanneſs of his birth; for, quitting the barren paths of military honour, he had turned his genius to the more thriving profeſſion of a footman; through the various aſcents of which he had riſen to his preſent rank of his excellency's gentleman; in which he had the unfaſhionable gratitude to return the favours of his former benefactor in the above manner, which his experience and knowledge of his maſter's temper convinced him to be the only one he could hope to ſucceed in. As to his promiſe about the child, he was in no pain about that, there being no perſon who could contradict whatever excuſe he ſhould pleaſe to give.

There is one circumſtance, which I ſee puzzles you, in the character of this man, and that is his taking *me* from his friend, when he muſt be ſenſible how badly he could ſpare ſuch a ſum. But you muſt conſider the power of nature when ſtrengthened by habit.

From his mother, Williams had inherited venality, which the bribery of vails, in his preſent profeſſion, had confirmed beyond all poſſibility of correction; ſo that it was no more in his power to refuſe a guinea when offered to him, than to change his ſtature or complexion. An attention to this obſervation would take off the wonder, and eaſe the world from the trouble of the exclamations that are daily made againſt the rapacity of perſons in office; for as ſuch are generally taken from the claſs of William, it cannot be expected but they muſt act from the ſame natural principle with him.

I *ſee* the depravity of human nature, when ſtripped of diſguiſe and ornament, affects your unexperienced heart too ſtrongly. But conſider that *we* ſee things as they really are, and to repreſent them otherwiſe to you would invert the deſign of my miſſion, and confirm, rather than remove, the prejudices that lead aſtray the mind of man.

However, this conſolation I can give you, that the vices I have already drawn, and may hereafter draw, to

your

your view, are not particular to this age or country: they are the weeds which, in every age and clime, have always, and always will over-run the human heart.

Nor is it juſt to call them vices (though, in compliance with the language of men, I do call them ſo) which *perhaps* are but * neceſſary parts of this univerſal ſyſtem; and though in a particular inſtance, and viewed by themſelves, they may appear deformed, yet when thrown into the general repreſentation of things, they may have their beauty and uſe, if only to diverſify the ſcene: and, with reſpect to men in particular, be as † advantageous to the community as they are prejudicial to individuals.

But to return to my maſter William. Beſide the advantages of education, he had ſuch from nature, that he was not only the moſt accompliſhed *gentleman*, but alſo the handſomeſt fellow of his time; an happineſs, of which he availed himſelf ſo well in the *polite* world, that he was the favourite of all the *compliant* fair, who ſhared with him the pleaſures they only ſuffered from his ſuperiors for hire.

Of this I ſaw ſufficient proof, that very evening, when he went to an aſſignation with the moſt celebrated courteſan of the age, who, ſacrificing avarice to pleaſure, gave orders to be denied to every body, and ſhut herſelf up with him, to give a looſe to joy for the evening.

This was a ſcene too ſenſual for a ſpirit to deſcribe: I ſhall therefore only ſay, that their fatigue and waſte of ſpirits were recruited with the higheſt delicacies and richeſt wines, and the pauſes of joy enlivened with the recital of the adventures of their profeſſions, heightened with the moſt poignant ridicule of thoſe whoſe folly was *their* fortune.

Before ſatiety could pall their pleaſures, time ſummoned them to buſineſs. The fair to prepare for the reception of her *friend*; and *my* maſter to wait on *his*;

* From hence it ſhould ſeem, the hint of a late treatiſe on the Origin of Evil, was borrowed, or elſe dictated by the ſame ſpirit.

† Fable of the bees.

when, to conclude the evening with proper gallantry, he preſented me to the maid at the door.

I was a good deal ſurpriſed, at being received with leſs emotion by the portreſs of Venus than I had ever found before; the ſight of me having always raiſed joy. But this was ſoon explained, when, on returning to her miſtreſs, ſhe threw me on the table, and received a ſhilling in exchange. An inſtance of that methodical œconomy, which by many ſavings makes up for one large expence, and exacts profit even from pleaſure.

The joy of the miſtreſs ſeemed to make amends to my vanity for the indifference of her maid, and promiſed me the full poſſeſſion of her heart; but I ſoon found myſelf miſtaken, and that her love for me was only while I was the property of another; for no ſooner did I become her own, than ſhe threw me careleſſly into her purſe, and turned her thoughts immediately to the acquiſition of more. But, though I loſt the greateſt part of my power over her, by coming into her poſſeſſion, I ſtill found ample room in her heart for my abode.

The apartments were ſcarce got in order, and my miſtreſs new dreſſed, when her *friend* appeared, to whom ſhe flew with all the appearance of rapture. But, however he might be deceived, the difference was plain to me, between the joyleſs careſſes ſhe ſold to him, and the ecſtaſy ſhe ſhared with my late maſter, the glow of whoſe kiſſes yet reeked upon her lips. Nor was this ſtrange: the ardor of her lover met her half way, and communicated as much fire as it received: but with her *keeper* the caſe was quite otherwiſe; all the advances were to come from her; all her careſſes were a duty; nor were the tendereſt ſhe could beſtow able to warm him to the leaſt return.

You wonder that a perſon in ſuch circumſtances ſhould be at the trouble and expence of *keeping* a miſtreſs, whoſe extravagance was to be equalled only by her inſolence. But this is only a ſmall inſtance of the tyranny of faſhion: and how will your aſtoniſhment be increaſed, when I tell you, that this very man, in the prime of life, was remark-

able

able for the coolneſs of his conſtitution, and now, in its decline, was married to a beautiful young lady, whoſe reſentment at his conjugal neglect roſe ſo high, as to charge it to inability.

Whether this was really the caſe and that he *kept* my miſtreſs to hide it, as a failing tradeſman ſets up a coach, or whether the paſſion remained, but ſo feebly ſupported, as to require the laſcivious blandiſhments of a proſtitute, I cannot determine, as I never was in his poſſeſſion to take a view of his heart.

CHAP. XXIII.

The manner in which Chryſal's new miſtreſs received and took care of her friend. How ſhe employed herſelf while he was aſleep. Her management of him next morning.

IT was about two in the morning, when my miſtreſs received him, drunk and ſtupified with play, at which he had loſt deeply that night. On his coming into her room, he threw himſelf into a chair, without ſaying a word, or ſhewing the leaſt ſenſibility of her careſſes; where after ſome time he fell faſt aſleep, which my miſtreſs no ſooner perceived, than calling her maid, to undreſs and roll him into bed, 'Here, Jane,' ſaid ſhe, 'take my place by this heap of mortality. I'll ſtep to '——ſtreet; perhaps the company may not be all gone. 'Never fear, I'll enſure you from a rape! He wants 'nothing in a bed-fellow but to keep him warm, and you 'may do that, while I paſs my night better than in 'nurſing his infirmities: I'll be home before he ſtirs.'

Jane obeyed her miſtreſs, who ſlipped into a chair, and went away directly to an houſe, where ſhe uſed to piddle away her leiſure hours with any chance cuſtomers, rather than be idle.

About five ended this ſcene, in the rites of which my miſtreſs bore a diſtinguiſhed part. I ſhall not attempt to deſcribe theſe myſteries: they were too groſs for my relation, as well as your conception, in your preſent mortified habit. She then returned home, and laying her *pure* body in her maid's place, beſide her *friend*, who

had not ſtirred yet, her fatigues ſoon threw her into a ſleep, as ſound as his.

It was noon before theſe fond lovers awoke: the firſt was my miſtreſs, who, enraged that any thing which bore the name of a man, ſhould ſhew ſo little ſenſibility of her charms, reſolved to teize him with endearments, which, as he was ſeldom in a humour to return in kind, he never failed to pay for in a more ſubſtantial manner.

When ſhe had awoke him with her toying, the *ſyren* thus began her ſong: 'How can my deareſt ſleep ſo 'long, when his little girl lies languiſhing by his ſide? 'O turn, and let me lay my head on that dear boſom.'—'Ha! What is it o'clock?' replyed the lover, yawning, and rubbing his eyes.—'Alas, I know not! I have 'told ſo many tedious hours, that I have forgot them: 'but what is time to us, who only live to love?'—'Paſt 'twelve! I muſt be gone! Some buſineſs.'—'Buſi-'neſs! Leave that for duller ſouls, who have no taſte 'for pleaſure: can you leave love and me for buſineſs!' —'I am ſorry I happened to overſleep myſelf, my 'dear; I believe I was bewitched to drink ſo much: 'but we'll make it up another time.'—'So you ſay al-'ways; but that other time will never come: but I 'will not be ſerved ſo; I am fleſh and blood, whatever 'other people may be; and you yourſelf know, it is 'not for want of friends I keep myſelf up, thus like a 'nun, for you; and all, I do not know for what!' 'Is 'the girl mad! Do not I give you every thing you want, 'every thing you deſire?'—'No, nor any thing I de-'ſire! I deſire now—So you will get up and leave me: 'I will not be uſed thus: you have got ſome other 'woman: but I here give you a fair warning, that I 'will be even with you! Sir George was here yeſter-'day, and ſo was the young lord—but I would 'not ſee either of them: and I am well requited now: 'but I know where to ſend to them; I will not be 'made a fool of every way, for nothing; and ſo you 'may *ſleep* where you pleaſe, I care not.'—'Come, my 'dear, let us not fall out for nothing; you have not

'ſhewn

'ſhewn me the diamond ear-rings you got laſt week.'—'No, my dear, they are not come home.'—'I thought 'you told me they were finiſhed when I gave you the 'money to pay for them.'—'They were ſo; but when 'he brought them home, I did not like them. The 'jeweller told me they were not ſo fine as thoſe he made 'for your lady, ſome time ago; ſo I ſent them back, 'and ordered him to make me a pair that ſhould be as 'good as her's at leaſt.'—'Not good enough, child! 'Were they not to coſt one hundred and fifty pounds?' —'And what is a hundred and fifty pounds?—Sir 'Richard gave his girl a pair that coſt five hundred 'pounds; but if you think theſe are too dear, you are 'not obliged to pay for them: there is another, who will 'be glad to do it.'—'And pray what are theſe fine 'one's to coſt?'—'Why—only—but kiſs me firſt— 'only two hundred pounds; but then I have beſpoke a 'necklace with them.'—'Zounds, a diamond necklace!' —'And what mighty matter is a diamond necklace? 'pray has not your *wife* one? But I ſee how it is; 'you think any thing good enough for me; and nothing 'good enough for her: but every one does not think ſo: 'I am not at a loſs'—'Well you ſaucy little minx; and 'what do they come to?'—'Another kiſs, and I'll tell 'you:—why don't frown, or I won't tell you at all;— 'only five hundred pounds.'—'Five hundred devils; 'that's more than my wife's coſt by one hundred pounds.' 'And do not you love me a hundred times better than 'your wife? I have given up thouſands for you. But, as 'I ſaid before, you need not pay for them, if you do not 'chuſe it; there are others who will: I ſee I am ſlight- 'ed; and I deſerve it, for ſlighting ſo many good offers: 'but I will not always be a fool!'—'Well, my dear, 'for this one time I will humour you: give me the pen 'and ink: but you muſt not expect that I ſhall ever gra- 'tify your extravagance ſo far again:'—'I thank you, 'my lord; I ſhall not trouble you again this great 'while: But what is this? Three hundred and fifty 'pounds! You have made a miſtake, my lord; I told

'you

'you five hundred pounds.'—'Well, child, did not I
'give you a hundred and fifty, to pay for the other
'pair?'—'Yes, my lord; but that was not to pay for
'this pair though, you know, theſe are dearer.'—'But,
'that and this will.'—'I am afraid not.'—'How ſo
'child; do not one hundred and fifty, and three hundred
'and fifty, make five hundred?'—'Indeed I am a poor
'accountant; but I know it will not do.'—'No? why
'ſo? I do not underſtand you:'—'I'll kiſs you firſt,
'and then I'll tell you.'—'Pſha; ceaſe fooling;—I
'am in haſte; I muſt go to court; and have ſcarce
'time to dreſs: where is the hundred and fifty pounds?
—'There.' (kiſſing him)—'Where?'—'Gone, as
'that kiſs is; all gone, and only the reliſh left behind,
'to give an appetite for more.'—'Infernal jade!' (aſide).
—'What do you ſay, my lord?—'That I cannot,
'will not bear ſuch extravagance.'—'I am glad I know
'your mind, my lord: then if you do not, ſomebody
'elſe will, who will not make ſuch a ſtir about trifles.'
—'Well, give me that bill.'—'No, thank you, my
'dear.'—'Why ſo?'—'For fear you ſhould be a bold
'boy, and not return it. If you pleaſe to give me the
'other hundred and fifty pounds, I'll get the necklace
'and ear-rings, if not, this will ſerve for ſome other uſe.'
—'Damnation! And then I muſt give it to her all
'over again.' (aſide). 'Well, my lord; you ſaid you
'were in haſte, and ſo am I.'—'Give me the pen and
'ink: there it is, you little termagant: but once more
'let me caution you againſt ſuch extravagance for the
'future.'—'And once more, let me tell you, my lord,
'not to give yourſelf ſuch airs: extravagance! They
'who want delicacies muſt pay for them; and if you
'think the price too dear, there are more cuſtomers in
'the market; and ſo, my lord, like it, or like it not,
'I will be ſupported: and more than that, what I want
'in pleaſure, ſhall be made up in profit: let wives ſave,
'who may be the better for the ſavings, *our* buſineſs is
'to make hay while the ſun ſhines.'—'Come, my dear;
'let us have ho diſputes; you have the money now; next

'time

'time we will clear off the other ſcore: give me a kiſs, 'I'll call in the evening, and take a diſh of tea with you: 'farewel.'—'Good morrow.—(after he is gone) for 'an old, impotent, poor ſpirited letcher, that muſt be 'treated like a dog, to make you know your duty. 'What fool would ever be at the trouble of behaving 'well to any fellow, when ſhe can ſo much better mould 'him to her pleaſure, by ill uſage!'

CHAP. XXIV.

The hiſtory and character of Chryſal's miſtreſs. She gives him to a noted matron. Some account of his new miſtreſs, and her manner of managing her family.

THIS principle ſhe acted up to, for two days that I was in her poſſeſſion, without any other variation in her conduct, than juſt what was neceſſary to work on the various tempers of her lovers, making no real difference between them, except it was, that ſhe always uſed thoſe worſt, who uſed her beſt.

I have often told you, that ſenſuality is diſagreeable to a ſpiritual being. I, therefore, longed to quit this miſtreſs, the ſucceſſion of whoſe amours was ſo conſtant and quick, that I was aſtoniſhed how nature could afford a fund of love for them all, in ſo young a creature; for ſhe was not twenty years old. I ſee you have a curioſity to know the hiſtory of this young votary of Venus, in which you think there muſt be ſomething extraordinary; but you are deceived; it contains nothing but common occurrences.

She was the daughter of tradeſpeople, in moderate circumſtances, whoſe fooliſh fondneſs, becauſe ſhe was a pretty, ſmart child, gave her an education above her rank, in hopes of her making her fortune by marriage.

This raiſed the vanity, natural to the female heart, ſo high, that ſhe deſpiſed her own ſtation, and not being ſo fortunate as immediately to climb to the one ſhe deſired, by the way propoſed, ſhe fell an eaſy victim to the firſt ſeducer who promiſed it in any other.

Thus the accompliſhments, by which the injudicious tenderneſs of her parents meant to raiſe her into a rank

higher than their own, became the cauſe of her falling into that of the loweſt of all human beings: a fall, though deplorable in itſelf, yet unaffecting to her, as the time, in which her mind ſhould have been formed to virtue, was given up to the nouriſhing that vanity which proved her ruin; ſo that ſhe is abſolutely inſenſible of the wretchedneſs of her condition, and never has the purſuit of her moſt infamous profeſſion diſturbed her by a moment's remorſe.

I told you of her ſpending the hours that were unemployed at home, at an houſe in ——ſtreet, where ſhe was always ſure of buſineſs. Though this venerable manſion was dedicated to the myſterious rites of unreſtrained love, yet, as the prieſts of all temples expect to live by the offerings made at them, her conſcience would not permit the prieſteſs of this, to break through an ordinance ſo long eſtabliſhed, and ſhe exacted fees from the votaries of her's: not indeed a tythe, indiſcriminately from all, whether they received benefit from their devotion, or not; but always in proportion to the fruits they reaped.

At this ſhrine was I offered the third night of my being in the poſſeſſion of this youug devotee, when the plenteouſneſs of her gain, from a multitude of lovers, ſeemed, to her piety, to merit ſo rich a return.

I now entered into a much more extenſive ſcene than my laſt, the proſtitution of which made but a ſmall part of the buſineſs of the profeſſion. But what I have related, in the hiſtory of my late miſtreſs, ſhall ſuffice for that branch, nor ſhall I give more than ſome outlines of the horrors of the reſt.

My new miſtreſs had originally been of the ſiſterhood of my laſt, who having fallen a prey to luſt, almoſt in her infancy, and having no beauty, nor any thing but extreme youth to recommend her, as ſoon as that was worn out, neglect obliged her to apply to other buſineſs for bread, and her natural turn determining her to this, as well as the outrageous virtue of the *undiſcovered* part of her own ſex, excluding her from every other, ſhe

changed

changed her occupation, from *yielding* to *providing* pleaſure, in which her ſucceſs was ſo great, that ſhe ſoon became the moſt eminent of her profeſſion.

It was near five in the morning when I changed my ſervice; and, buſineſs being ended, my late miſtreſs having reigned *ſole miſtreſs* of the night, and ſeen out all the company, there remained nothing to do, after ſhe went home, but to ſee the inmates to their truckle-beds in the cock-lofts, where ſtripping off every part, not only of the finery, but even of the comforts of dreſs, they were crowded three or four together, to keep each other warm, under a ragged coverlet, upon a bare mattreſs, where their ſhudderings and groans made a juſt contraſt to the ſpirited wickedneſs of their converſation ſome hours before.

This was always the fate of thoſe, who were not ſo ſucceſsful in the evening as to earn the price of a better bed, above the fees of the houſe and the hire of cloaths.

Theſe happy few were treated with fondneſs, while they ſquandered their poor *peculium* in a drop of cordial to ſettle their heads, and were lodged in apartments ſuited to their purſes: though the night before perhaps they had experienced the ſame fate with their ſiſters above ſtairs, and knew they muſt expect it again the next, if they proved unſucceſsful in their buſineſs.

When matters were thus ſettled, this happy family diſpoſed themſelves to take the beſt repoſe which diſeaſe in mind and body would permit.

An active ſpirit diſdains reſt. Though debauchery had anticipated old age in the conſtitution of my miſtreſs, yet her application to buſineſs made her refuſe nature even neceſſary indulgence. She was ready to go out before ten that morning, when the modeſt decency of her dreſs and appearance were ſuch as drew the general good opinion, and would almoſt deceive the *devil* himſelf, on whoſe moſt favourite ſervice ſhe was going.

CHAP. XXV.

Chryſal's miſtreſs pays a viſit to the laſt place ſhe could have been ſuſpected for going to. She meets a young

young lady, with whom, by an artifice, she goes home. Her schemes to ensnare the lady.

IF a judgment were to be formed for the whole day, from the manner of beginning it, my mistress should have spent her's most happily; her first visit being to church, where the piety of her behaviour was an edification to the devout matrons, who, having nothing to do at home, meet there regularly, to compare their aches and dreams of the night before, and enjoy the innocent amusement of a little gossiping over the affairs of their neighbours.

But her devotion wasted not itself so fruitlessly: her industry had formed expectations of drawing considerable advantage from it, and so, anticipating futurity, and making sure of the reward here, which others waited for in another world. The immediate motive of her devotion, this morning, was to see a young lady with whom she had commenced an acquaintance at this church, and who constantly attended divine service there. You are surprised how she could think of going to such a place, on such an errand; but the wolf roams about for prey every where, and is often most successful, where his attempts are least suspected: though I must rob her industry of the merit of design in the first introduction to this affair.

Going through St. Martin's Lane, one morning about a month before, she was so struck with the appearance of a lovely young creature, in widow's weeds, who was going into the church, that she followed her; where the fervency, with which she poured out her soul in devotion, gave such a lustre to her beauty, and made it shine so lovely through her grief, that my mistress immediately marked her for her *list*, not doubting but she should be able to turn her distress to such advantage, as should bring her into her measures, and make her beauty yield her a rich return for her pains, from some of her customers. If you consider the nature of woman-kind, you will not wonder at this instance of the profligacy of my mistress. They are ever in extremes; either the best or

worst

worſt of human creatures. From church, ſhe dogged her to her lodging in a little court, where ſhe lived with a poor, but honeſt family, in ſuch privacy that no one in the neighbourhood could give any account of her.

Real virtue ſhines with a luſtre, that dazzles the moſt confirmed vice, and keeps it at an aweful diſtance. My miſtreſs, hardened as ſhe was in all the ways of ſin and impudence, dared not to go directly to her, without ſome buſineſs or introduction: but as ſhe had not either, her ready genius prompted her to win her good opinion, under an appearance of religion, and then an acquaintance would come eaſily.

She was not deceived in her expectations: a few mornings conſtant attendance at church, and, the exemplary warmth of her devotions, ſtruck the eye, and opened the heart of unexperienced innocence to the acquaintance ſhe wiſhed for, which ſhe did not fail to improve, by the ſame arts, to ſome degree of intimacy.

In this ſituation they were, when ſhe went, but without any appearance of deſign, to meet her this morning at church, as uſual. As they came out together, my miſtreſs, turning with her fair *friend*, ſaid ſhe had ſome buſineſs into Long-Acre, and aſked her if ſhe went that way, to which the young lady innocently anſwered, that ſhe did, and that ſhe ſhould be glad to walk with her.

As they walked together, my miſtreſs turned her converſation on the wicked ways of the town, and particularly the many baſe deſigns that were laid to enſnare unwary innocence, adding, that all the pleaſure which ſenſuality could give the moſt luxurious heart, muſt fall infinitely ſhort of what ſhe felt at that very moment, in the deſign ſhe was then going upon, of relieving the diſtreſſes of a worthy family.

She had timed her diſcourſe ſo as to ſay theſe words juſt as ſhe came to the entrance of the court, in which ſhe knew the widow lived, when, feigning to ſlip, ſhe fell all along, crying out, as in the utmoſt agony, that ſhe had wrenched her ancle.

The lady raiſing her with the greateſt tenderneſs, ex-

preſſed her concern for the unhappy accident, and deſired ſhe would ſubmit to be helped into *her* lodgings, which fortunately were at the next door, where, though ſhe could be but poorly accommodated, ſhe might be more at her eaſe than in a more ſumptuous place, and ſhould have all the care in her power. This was juſt what my miſtreſs had ſchemed for, who, courteoſly acceping the offer, made a ſhift to limp in, without any other aſſiſtance than her's.

It raiſed my indignation to ſee the tenderneſs with which the beautiful young creature pulled off her ſhoe and ſtocking, and chafed her ancle, thrown away upon ſo unworthy an object, as it did my abhorrence to hear the counterfeit ſhrieks and groans of my miſtreſs, and the aſſurance with which ſhe attributed the ſwellings cauſed by debauchery to this immediate accident.

This affrighted the young lady ſo, that ſhe, in a manner, forced her to ſend for a ſurgeon, which with much intreaty ſhe yielded to do; but it muſt be for a *friend* of her own, a gentleman who lived a conſiderable way off, at the polite end of the town, for ſhe could not think of letting any *common low-lived* fellow come near her.

Upon this a porter was directly diſpatched for her own ſurgeon, and in the mean time, as ſhe began to grow eaſier, ſhe recovered her ſpirits, and renewed the converſation that had been broken off by this accident.

'I was telling you, my dear friend,' ſaid ſhe, 'for ſo 'I ſhall ever call you from this moment, (your kindneſs 'having completed the conqueſt which your beauty had 'before made of my heart,) I was telling you, that I 'was going to viſit a family this morning, where I pro-'miſed myſelf the higheſt joy that a human heart is ca-'pable of feeling, in lightening the diſtreſs of the vir-'tuous, by ſharing with them ſome of that wealth 'which heaven has abundantly bleſſed me with, and 'which can juſtly be applied to no other uſe, than mak-'ing this grateful return to that goodneſs which beſtow-'ed it.

'But

'But my heart was too elate with the thought, and 'I received this accident as a caution from heaven not 'to flatter myself with any thing so strongly for the fu- 'ture. But, though I could not have this pleasure my- 'self, the benefit shall not be delayed to them. I will 'make you my almoner; an office that I know will 'suit the goodness of your heart. You shall give this 'packet, which will put an end to all their distresses.'

'Oh, madam! your good opinion is the greatest ho- 'nour to me,' replied the lady, 'and I hope I shall 'never forfeit it, especially in this commission, which 'I shall undertake with the most sincere joy; but pray, 'dear madam, who are the persons to whom I must dis- 'pense your goodness?'

'That's true, my dear,' returned my mistress 'I 'should give you some account of them, that you may 'be the better enabled to judge of the joy I feel in serv- 'ing them. It is the widdow of an officer, who has 'been killed in this war, and left her with three poor 'babes, destitute of every support but the allowance of 'the government, which, wretched as it is, and only ag- 'gravating misery by barely prolonging life under it, is 'often gasped for by the hungry mouth in vain, where 'interest is wanting to procure the immediate relief of 'it, as was her unhappy case, so that they must have 'actually perished for want of food, had not Providence 'brought them into my knowledge, seemingly by the 'greatest accident, about six months ago, since when, 'I have myself afforded them the necessary comforts of 'life, and have also made such interest for them, with 'some of my friends, that I have here got them a grant 'of a pension on the *Irish establishment*, sufficient to bring 'up the children, and make the remainder of the mo- 'ther's days happy; for, my dear, I never do any thing 'by halves—Good God! child, what is the matter 'with you? What do you weep so for?'

'Nothing, dear madam,' replied the lady, 'nothing; 'I only sympathize in the distress of the poor widow.'— 'But, my dear, that distress is now at an end.'—'O

'madam, let me carry her the bleſſing! let me not de-
'lay her happineſs a moment! Who knows but that her
'heart is this minute burſting with the dreadful apprehen-
'ſions of want for herſelf, and her dearer infants!'—'With
'all my heart, madam; but you will pleaſe to order a
'chair to be called to carry me home, when you go;
'for I cannot ſtay *here* alone.'—'Dear madam, forgive
'my rudeneſs; I beg your pardon, pray forgive me:
'the diſtreſs of the widow put every thing out of my
'head; indeed it did; pray excuſe me.'—'Excuſe you,
'my dear, I honour the heart that feels another's woe;
'you ſhall go directly; you ſhall be the meſſenger of
'glad tidings to them. But, my deareſt young lady,
'give me leave to tell you, that I fear you have not
'anſwered me ſincerely; I fear your tears flow from
'ſome other cauſe, than mere ſympathy; ſpeak, my
'child! does any thing affect your own heart? Can I
'any way be ſerviceable to you? Command me freely,
'and make me happy in ſerving one for whom my heart
'has conceived ſo tender an eſteem! Speak as you would
'to your own mother, and wrong not my friendſhip
'with a doubt.'—'O madam, madam!' replied the
mourner, as ſoon as ſobbing permitted utterance, 'I
'have no mother to make my complaint to; I am the
'wretched widow you have deſcribed! A widow, with-
'out ſupport, without friends, or any other hope than
'juſt in heaven.'—'And heaven will raiſe you friends
'my deareſt child! Heaven has raiſed you a friend in
'me! You ſhall be *my* child; I look upon you as my
'own! as a gift from heaven, from this moment!
'You ſhall leave this place this very day! It is not fit
'for *my* child! I will take a lodging for you near my-
'ſelf till *my nephew*, who is lately come to town to ſee
'me, goes home; and then you ſhall live with me for
'ever.'

Saying theſe words, ſhe threw her arms round her deſtined victim, and wiped away the tears that flowed down her cheeks, while a variety of paſſions filled her tender heart almoſt to burſting.

CHAP.

CHAP XXVI.

The history of the young lady. She is critically interrupted by the arrival of an unexpected person. She is reconciled to her father, who rewards the woman of the house, and resolves to punish the bawd.

WHEN she had recovered herself, a little, my mistress thus resumed her lore. 'Weep not, my 'deareſt child, all will be well. And have you any 'dear little infants too?'—'Oh no! my wretchedneſs, 'thank heaven, is all my own!'—'But may I, my 'dear, aſk your name, and the circumſtances of your 'ſtory! I would know all, that nothing may be unre-'dreſſed.'—'You are all goodneſs, madam! My ſtory, 'alas! has few circumſtances, and they are all diſtreſſes! 'I loſt my mother while I was yet a child: my father 'left me in the country to the care of a governeſs, the 'wife of his chaplain, who educated me in the ſenti-'ments of piety and virtue. When I was ſcarce four-'teen I returned the love of her ſon, the moſt deſerving 'and moſt lovely of his ſex, who was two years older 'than me: but, young as we were, we concealed our 'paſſion, till my father obtained him a commiſſion in 'the army; when, on the regiment's being ordered to 'America, I yielded to his fear of loſing me, and con-'ſented to a private marriage, which was ſoon diſcovered 'by a letter falling into my father's hands, who, in his 'rage, turned my huſband's father and mother, and me, 'out of doors, nor would ever ſee us more. A ſmall 'vicarage afforded us a preſent ſupport. My mother-in-'law ſoon died; the ſuſpicion of her having betrayed the 'confidence of my father, and been inſtrumental in my 'marriage, breaking her heart; as did the account of my 'huſband's death, his father's. I then was left quite 'deſtitute, and have ſince ſupported a wretched being 'by my work, which the honeſt woman of this houſe 'takes in for me, without the leaſt hope of relief in this 'world, till your goodneſs has, this day, taken com-'paſſion on me.'—'And what is your father's name, 'my dear?'—'That I have never yet revealed, as I

'would willingly hide the disgrace my distress may be 'thought to do him; but with you I need not use that 'caution; his name is——'

Just at this word, the surgeon, who had been sent for to my mistress, entered, and presented a new scene.

At the first sight of this person, the young lady gave a great shriek, and swooned away. The gentleman stood a moment stupified with astonishment, when turning hastily to my mistress, 'Is this the lady?' said he.—'Aye, and a lovely one she is,' answered she; but help 'me to raise her up, when you will see her better; she 'has been just telling me her story, and the grief of it 'has overcome her: it is a moving one; and she must 'be our own.'

'O my child! my child!' exclaimed he in a transport, and, spurning my mistress from her with his feet, raised her himself, and leaned her head upon his bosom, kissing her, and almost smothering her with his tears. 'Oh, my poor child, what have you escaped!—what 'have you endured!'

It is impossible to describe the situation of my mistress at this scene. She saw the error she had been guilty of, in introducing a woman to whom she was a stranger; and was aware of the danger with which the horror of such an interview on such an occasion threatened her. While, therefore, the father seemed wrapped in an ecstasy that made him as insensible as his daughter, she thought it the best way to retire from the first burst of his anger, and, forgetting her sprained ancle, was going directly away; but he perceived her intent, and calling her with a voice that nailed her to the ground. 'Stir not, upon 'your life,' said he, 'I will have this whole mystery 'cleared up.'

His daughter, just then, opening her eyes, and finding herself laid upon her father's bosom, love, duty, respect, fear, and joy filled her heart with such a variety of passions, that she sunk under their weight, and swooned away.

This embarrassed the father almost to distraction, till the woman of the house coming in, with her assistance,

she

she was at length recovered, for my mistress was so terrified, that she did not dare to approach her.

As soon as the lady had lightened her heart by a flood of tears, she threw herself at her father's feet, unable either to look up, or to speak to him. Moved with the mute eloquence of her grief, and melting in the warmth of nature, he raised her from the ground, and spoke to her in these words. 'Be comforted, my child! I am! 'I will be your father! But tell me what has passed be-'tween you and this vile woman!'—'Oh, sir, is she not 'my best, my only friend? Has she not restored me to 'your love?'—'Have a care, child! She your friend? 'then you are lost beyond recovery indeed! she is a re-'proach to her sex! to human nature!'—'Oh, Sir! 'how can that be? Did she not bring you here to me? 'does not that shew her virtue and compassion to my 'distress?'—'Compose yourself a little, child! it is 'true, she brought me here; but tell me, I charge you, 'on what terms she told you I was to come; and how 'she came to interest herself in your affairs! Fear not, 'but speak the truth.'

On this she told him the whole of her acquaintance with my mistress, and by what accident, and in what character, she imagined he had been sent for; but that as soon as she saw *him* enter the room, she thought my mistress must have been acquainted with her story, and had taken this method of introducing her to him, in hopes the surprise and sight of her distress might operate on his compassion.

Truth forces conviction. He was satisfied with the account she gave him; and taking her again in his arms, 'I have found you again, my child,' said he, 'and I 'will never lose you more! Be the errors of your youth, 'be my severity forgotten! From henceforth you are 'my child, and I will be your father! As to that vile 'wretch, know that her whole acquaintance with you 'was sought with a premeditated design of betraying 'you to ruin. She told me the whole nearly as you 'have done: and encouraged by your distress, of which

'she

'she had gotten some general hints, but ignorant who 'you were, she laid the scheme of this pretended acci- 'dent to get admission into your house; for she well 'knew where you lived, and then sent for me, to a place 'I had appointed, that I might come and see you, under 'the appearance of a surgeon; that if I liked you, I 'might have the preference of her interest in you: for 'so deep had she laid her scheme, that you could not 'have escaped her: the trial would have been too great 'for human fortitude! And this most execrable mys- 'tery of iniquity did she undertake for the paltry reward 'of fifty pounds, which, I must take the shame upon 'myself to own, I had promised her, little imagining 'that I was bargaining for the seduction of my own 'innocent child. But I see, I acknowledge the hand 'of heaven in this whole affair, that has thus opened 'my eyes to the danger of such a licentious course 'of life, and made the recovery of my child the means, 'and the reward of my conversion.'

'Weep not, my dear; justly may you turn your eyes 'with detestation from such a fiend: But I shall take 'care that she meets a just reward; while you prepare 'to go home with me, for I will not leave you a mo- 'ment in this scene of horror.'—'Oh, mercy, mercy, 'my lord!' cried my mistress, 'have mercy on me! 'nor overwhelm with your anger, a wretched creature, 'whose remorse is a load too great to bear.' 'Away, vile 'wretch,' replied he, in a rage, 'nor dare to speak ano- 'ther word! And here, fellow,' calling to the porter, 'who had directed him to the house, 'bring me the pa- 'rish constable.'

While the porter went for him, my mistress, wretched now indeed, her guilty fears magnifying her danger, stood trembling, but afraid to assay his pity with another word.

After he had walked a turn or two about the room, his daughter entered, and with her the woman of the house with her little effects, which were soon packed up; at the sight of them his countenance softened:

'Well,

'Well, my dear,' ſaid he to his daughter, 'I ſee you 'are ready to come with me; but I muſt wait a mo-'ment, to do juſtice to the wretch who brought me 'hither. Plead not for her! I would not have you 'ever ſue to me in vain, again; and to any thing in 'her favour I cannot yield! But my juſtice ſhall not 'only be ſevere, nor confined to her alone. You have 'ſaid that this honeſt woman has been a friend to you; 'ſhe ſhall be rewarded. Here, good woman, is the 'ſum of money I was to have given this vile creature 'for my daughter in another ſenſe. Take it, as the 'reward of your honeſty and kindneſs to her; and call 'on her every year of your life for the ſame ſum.'

The poor woman took it with reverence, but was unable to ſpeak her gratitude, her heart was ſo full, while his daughter dropped ſuddenly upon her knees, and raiſing her hands and eyes to heaven, exclaimed in rapture, '*Oh pour thy bleſſings, Heaven, on his head, who thus 'diſpenſes happineſs on all who merit it!*' As ſhe ſaid theſe words, the conſtable came, into whoſe charge his lordſhip gave my miſtreſs to be taken to a juſtice of the peace, whither he appointed to follow her; and then handed his daughter into a coach, in which he took her directly home.

CHAP. XXVII.

The addreſs of Chryſal's miſtreſs, and civility of a conſtable. She arrives at the juſtice's, and is ſifted and ſoftened by his clerk, and terrified by his worſhip. Chryſal changes his ſervice.

AS ſoon as this happy couple were gone, my miſtreſs recovered her ſpirits, and ſmiled with contempt at a danger ſhe had often gone through before, without harm. 'And ſo,' ſays ſhe, 'maſter conſta-'ble, I am given in charge to you! and for what pray? 'But I am no ſuch novice as to yield myſelf a priſoner, 'till I ſee proper authority to hold me; therefore, Sir, 'I ſhall wiſh you a good morning: if you pleaſe, you 'may go tell his lordſhip, that I was not at leiſure to 'wait for him at the juſtice's; and, becauſe you may

'be

'be dry after your walk, here is a crown to drink my 'health.'

'I thank you, miſtreſs,' replied the conſtable, taking the money, 'but, in the mean time, you muſt come! 'I am ſorry I cannot let you go.'—'Cannot let me 'go? Pray, Sir, where is your authority to keep me?' '—Here, miſtreſs!' producing his ſtaff. 'But your 'warrant!'—'Oh! as for that, I'll make bold to do 'without one this time, and take you to the juſtice on 'my own authority, and his lordſhip's requeſt; and ſo, 'miſtreſs, you had better come along, for I am in 'haſte: you may have a coach if you pleaſe.'—'Aye, 'ſo I will, to carry me home! and here's ſomething 'for you to pay the coachman,' putting a guinea in his hand. 'Tis very well, miſtreſs, I will ſee you 'ſafe home, to be ſure, if you deſire it, and the juſtice 'gives you leave; for to him we muſt go directly.'— 'Then give me my money; and be aſſured you ſhall 'anſwer for this falſe impriſonment.'—'Your money, 'miſtreſs! why, aye! ſo I will, if I do not earn it.' 'Then let me go home this moment.'—'No, no, miſ-'treſs! that I cannot do till you have been to viſit his 'worſhip; and then I will ſee you ſafe home, if he 'gives me leave, and drink your health into the bar-'gain; and that was what you gave me the money for: 'come, come, miſtreſs, one of your trade ſhould know 'better things than to aſk for money back again! Have 'I not ſhewed you all the *civility* in my power? Do 'you think I would ſtand preaching with you here this 'hour for nothing! come along, the coach is at the 'door.'

I *ſaw* you were ſurpriſed at the addreſs and turn of expreſſion in my miſtreſs's converſation with this young lady, before the arrival of her father, as above her ſphere; but nature had given her a capacity equal to any thing, and her intercourſe with the *polite* world had gained her an eaſe of behaviour, and elegance of expreſſion, that made every condition of life ſeem natural to her. As to the ſtory of the family, whom ſhe was going

to

to relieve, she had actually prepared one of her confederates to have acted that part, so that the lord might justly say, her design was laid so well, that it was next to impossible for her to miss of success. For, by this deceit, she would have gained the young lady's confidence, to receive favours from her, and, when she had her in her debt, she thought she could make her own terms.

As soon as my mistress and her conductor were come into the antichamber of justice, the clerk, recognizing her, addressed her thus: 'Good-morrow, mistress, pray 'what has got us the favour of your company? You 'have been so great a stranger of late, that I was be-'ginning to think we had lost you.'—'Pray, Sir,' said she, 'let me speak a word with you in the next room.' On which he ordered her to be shewn in, and only waited to ask the constable, by whom, and for what, she was sent there, who was able to give him no other answer, than that the lord had ordered him to bring her, and said he would follow himself directly.

Having got this *full* information, the clerk came into the room to my mistress, and told her, with a look of importance and concern, that he was sorry to see her on so bad an account. 'So bad an account, Sir!' said she, 'why! pray what do you think I am brought 'here for? Nothing in this world! they can charge me 'with nothing but intention; and I hope that is not 'punishable by the law!'—'I hope it will appear so,' replied he, 'but,' shrugging up his shoulders, 'my lord 'has sent a message here, that has another appearance!' 'And pray, Sir, what does my lord charge me with?' 'You'll excuse my revealing the secrets of a privy-'counsellor! He will be here too soon, I am afraid, to 'tell you himself.'

Versed as my mistress was in all the wiles of man, the look and manner of his saying these words alarmed her conscious fears. 'Pray, Sir,' said she, 'what 'has his lordship said? or, if you do not think proper 'to tell me that, at least you can direct me how to

'make

'make the beſt defence againſt his deſigns! I ſhall not 'be ungrateful! you know I never was.'—'Why, 'that's true, madam,' replied he, 'and indeed I ſhould 'take great pleaſure in ſerving you, and getting you 'out of this *hole*, but my lord, you know, is a great 'man, and can, in a manner, do what he pleaſes with 'poor people.'—'Pray, Sir, can I ſpeak a word to 'the juſtice?'—'I fear he is engaged juſt now; be-'ſides, it is ſo long ſince he has ſeen or heard from you, 'that I believe you muſt expect but little favour from 'him.' Why that is the very thing I would ſpeak to him 'about; and believe me, it was my buſineſs out ſo 'early this morning, till I was delayed by this unlucky 'accident.'—'As for that matter, you know you may 'ſay any thing to me, as well as to him, and I can tell 'him.'—'That is true, why, all I have to ſay to 'him, at preſent, is to beg his acceptance of theſe five 'guineas for his paſt favours, and his advice how to get 'out of this ſcrape; and pray do you take theſe three 'for your trouble. I am ſorry I have no more to of-'fer, but really the times are very bad, and little or 'no money ſtirring among the gentlemen; beſide, all 'my ladies have been very unlucky of late, and the 'doctor, you know, muſt be always paid in hand.'—'I am ſorry things go ſo badly with you; I will ſpeak 'to the juſtice, and let you know what he ſays, and 'you may depend on my friendſhip and intereſt at all 'times; though I am afraid this is a very bad affair. 'I will go to him directly, and return to you as ſoon as 'poſſible.'

I here left my miſtreſs to her meditations, having been one of the pieces ſhe had given to the clerk. You may imagine I was glad to leave ſuch a ſervice, though I could not promiſe myſelf much pleaſure, beſide variety, in the exchange; from what I had already ſeen of that which I was entering into.

The juſtice was in his office, buſied in examining the informations of ſome of his people, who had made ſome lucky *hits* the evening before. On a wink from his clerk,

clerk, they were all ordered to withdraw, when reaching *me* and four more of my brethren to his worſhip; 'Here, Sir,' ſaid he, 'is five guineas from Mrs.——.' 'So then,' replied he, 'ſhe has thought proper to come 'at laſt.'—'To come? no, no, Sir! ſhe has been 'brought, or elſe I believe you would have hardly ſeen 'her.'—'The ungrateful jade; but what is the matter 'now?'—'I really cannot well tell; nor does the con'ſtable know any more, than that my lord——— or'dered him to bring her, and ſaid that he ſhould follow 'himſelf.'—'My lord! then I muſt be ready to re'ceive him properly: he is a great man: quick! reach 'me my green velvet cap, red ſlippers, and new gown, 'open half a ſcore of thoſe books, the largeſt of them, 'and lay them on that great table, as if I had been re'ferring. There! now I look like a juſtice! and bid 'thoſe gentry, I was ſpeaking to, go backwards till 'my lord is gone: he muſt not ſee ſuch faces; they 'might prejudice him againſt us; and he is a great man: 'ſo now I'll open the new juſtice, and his lordſhip may 'come as ſoon as he pleaſes.'

Juſt as all things were thus prepared for his lordſhip's reception, in proper formality, a ſervant brought a note from him, to let his worſhip know, he could not come himſelf that morning, but deſired he would take proper care of the woman he had ordered to be taken before him, who kept a houſe of bad fame in ſuch a ſtreet, where, upon the leaſt enquiry, he would not fail to find ſufficient matter againſt her, from her neighbours.

Though his lordſhip's not coming was a diſappointment to his worſhip, after the preparations made to receive him; and balked him of an important advertiſement for the next morning; yet the general wording of this note gave him ſome conſolation, as it might ſeem to authorize any meaſures he might pleaſe to take, to ſqueeze the criminal before him—'This may do,' ſaid he to the clerk, 'this may do ſomething: but we muſt 'proceed with caution, for Mrs.——— is an old 'hand: let her be called in: I'll *ſoften* her a little firſt,

'and then you may work upon her after as you pleaſe.' As ſoon as ſhe came in, his worſhip accoſted her thus: 'So miſtreſs; this is a fine affair; I knew what 'your doings would come to, at laſt; I have often 'warned you; but you would take no advice; and now 'you ſee the conſequence! Do, make her *mittimus!* 'I muſt wait upon his lordſhip; and I cannot go till 'ſhe is committed!'—'Committed! dear your worſhip, 'for what muſt I be committed? I have done nothing.' 'No! to be ſure, you have done nothing! his lordſhip 'would proſecute you ſo ſeverely for nothing: look at 'this letter! Do you know this hand-writing? His 'lordſhip has here given me an account of the whole 'affair, and deſired that I would proceed againſt you 'with the utmoſt rigour of the law! I have already ſent 'to ſearch your houſe.'

This word completed the terrors, into which the ſight of his lordſhip's well-known hand had thrown her; and deprived her of all reſolution and preſence of mind.—She burſt into tears, and throwing herſelf on her knees, 'Oh, good your worſhip! dear Mr. Clerk,' ſaid ſhe, 'adviſe me: aſſiſt me to get over this misfortune! Here 'is my watch; it coſt fifty pounds at a pawnbroker's 'but a month ago: it is a repeater: take it, Mr. Juſ-'tice! Mr. Clerk, here are my rings; they are the only 'valuable things I have: take them, and help me out 'at this dead lift: ſend, and ſtop the people from go-'ing into my poor houſe; I ſhall be *blown up:* the gen-'tlemen will all deſert me: I ſhall be ruined, juſt when 'I have brought things to a little bearing: help me but 'this once, and I never will give you cauſe to com-'plain of me again: I will always be punctual to my 'promiſe.'

CHAP. XXVIII.

She is diſcharged upon proper bail. The labours of Chryſal's new maſter, in the ſervice of the public, with ſome of the various myſteries of his office.

THE work was now done, and a wink having ſettled the *cue* between the juſtice and his clerk, the lat-

ter

ter began thus. 'If I may preſume to adviſe your 'worſhip, though this is a very bad affair, to be ſure, 'yet as it is not quite felony *by the ſtatute*, I am hum- 'bly of opinion, that if bail could be got.'—'Dear 'Mr. Clerk, I am obliged to you.'—'But then, con- 'ſider, my lord is a great man.'—'That is true, pleaſe 'your worſhip; but the law is greater than any man, 'and the law is very tender of the liberty of the ſub- 'ject, and ſays expreſſly *in the ſtatute, in favore liberta- 'tis*, that no perſon ſhall be confined that can get bail; 'and beſide, who knows, if ſhe was at liberty, but 'ſhe might find means to be reconciled to his lordſhip, 'and ſo all would be well.'—'Dear, Mr. Clerk, that 'is true; I would eaſily be reconciled to him; I know 'how to gain his favour when his anger is a little cool- 'ed,'—'Why, miſtreſs, if you are quite ſure of that, 'I believe we may venture to bail you: but where are 'your friends?'—'Dear, your worſhip, I have no 'friends; I have nothing to make friends with; I 'throw myſelf upon you, gentlemen!'—'Why really 'this is a nice caſe, but if you'll ſtep into the next 'room, we'll conſider what can be done for you.'—'O! 'but ſend and ſtop the men that went to my houſe!'— 'Never fear, they were not to go without further 'orders.'

When ſhe was gone out, 'Well,' ſaid the juſtice, 'this has been a good *bit*, it makes up for the bad week: 'but cannot you gueſs what this matter is?'—'Not a 'word of it,' replied the clerk, 'ſhe has not dropped a 'ſyllable herſelf, that could let me the leaſt into it, and I 'would not diſcover my ignorance, by aſking her any 'queſtions. But I ſuppoſe it is only ſome trick ſhe has 'played my lord about a girl, for you know ſhe has of- 'ten told us, that he was one of her beſt cuſtomers, and 'boaſted of his protection; and if it is no more than 'that, as I imagine, he will think no more of it, and, 'ſo the beſt way is to let her go; for indeed we can- 'not keep her, if we would; though to keep up the form, 'for fear ſhe ſhould *ſmell* us out, ſhe muſt have ſome

'bail; and therefore I'll go and fill a bond, and make 'a couple of our people put on their *bailing cloaths*, and 'come and ſign with her, though I do not think ſhe has 'money left to pay for the bond, or make the fellows 'drink: but ſhe has done pretty well already, that is 'the truth.'

Saying this, he went out, and in a little time returned with my late miſtreſs, and two of the fellows, the ſhabbineſs of whoſe appearance, had made his worſhip order them out of the lord's ſight juſt before, now dreſſed out like reputable houſekeepers, who gravely ſigned with my miſtreſs, without ever aſking what; and upon her returning a negative ſhrug, to a wink from the clerk, went out, without a word.

The buſineſs was now over, and my late miſtreſs diſmiſſed to follow her occupation, and make up, by double diligence, for the misfortunes of that morning, only with an aſſurance to the clerk that ſhe would remember his kindneſs, and be *punctual* for the future.

I was now entered into a ſervice, where I had an opportunity of ſeeing into the whole myſtery of juſtice: but you muſt not expect that I ſhould reveal all the ſecrets of ſo venerable a trade: though I may give a few general hints for your information in ſo abſtruſe and intricate a ſcience.

The affair of my late miſtreſs was the laſt of that morning; my worſhipful maſter putting *me* into his purſe, and going directly to dinner, which had *waited* for him ſome time. But, though his fare was good, his care for the public would not permit him to make long meals, or debauch away his time. After a ſhort refreſhment of only two hours, he returned to his office, where he reaſſumed his labours, in all the various branches of his extenſive employment. The firſt thing he looked into was the *informations*, which the affair of my miſtreſs had interrupted in the morning, as I told you before: when calling his people, one after another, before him, he went through them regularly, in this manner: 'John Gib-'bet, you here inform me that you have found out the

'perſon

'perſon who took the gentleman's hat, in the quarrel in 'Chelſea fields, laſt Sunday evening, which you think to 'make a robbery of: let me hear the circumſtances of 'that affair, for you are ſo keen a blood-hound, when you 'get upon any ſcent, that you are for making every 'thing robbery, be the caſe what it will.'

'Pleaſe your worſhip,' replied Gibbet, turning the *quid* in his cheek and ſquirting out the juice, 'I do all 'things for the beſt, and that you know; and that I 'have brought many things to bear, which nobody elſe 'would undertake, as witneſs that affair on Shuter's 'hill, that got you ſo much credit, and money too.'

—'Why that's true, John; but then you ſhould alſo 'remember the curſed ſcrape you brought me into about 'the young fellow who wrote the threatening letters to 'the farmer, about burning his barns: you undertook 'to prove that too: but you know how you left me in 'the lurch, after I had gone ſuch lengths as had like to 'have ruined me. Plain ſwearing will not always do, 'though never ſo home, you ſhould remember that: you 'ſhould attend to circumſtances alſo: but as to this 'affair, let me hear what you can make of it.

'Your worſhip muſt know that *I*, and two or three 'more of our people, having nothing to do, *ſhammed* a 'quarrel, in which a gentleman, who was coming by, 'loſt his hat. It was a large hat, with a very broad 'gold lace, ſuch as your foreigners wear: it was I that 'ſhoved off the hat, and ſeeing a ſhabby, idle-looking 'young fellow ſtanding by, without one, I took it up, 'and, aſking him if it was his, reached it to him, and 'ſaw him make off with it directly. Now, if this is 'not a plain robbery, I do not know what is! A fellow 'runs away with a gentleman's hat, who advertiſes it, 'with a reward for taking the thief, whom he will 'proſecute! now I have found out the fellow's haunts, 'for indeed I dogged him, and will have himſelf when-'ever you pleaſe, and can clench the proſecution, by 'ſwearing that I ſaw him carry off the hat; and you

'know I need ſay no more, nor take any notice who
'gave it him.'

'Why, John, there may be ſomething in this affair.
'I like it very well, John; and ſo, clerk, you may enter
'him on the liſt for next ſeſſions. This affair has a
'good look; nor is there any thing unjuſt in it: for,
'though you gave him the hat, as he knew it was not
'his own, and yet carried it off, he is guilty of the
'theft, and that is the ſame as robbery, in juſtice,
'though it may not in law; and juſtice is the thing to
'go by, with a ſafe conſcience. And ſo you may go,
'John, I will let you know when it is proper to
'have him taken up, only have an eye to him, for fear
'any one elſe ſhould ſnap him out of our hands. Who
'comes next? Richard Sly, you ſay you have found
'out the knot of young fellows that have begun to in-
'feſt the ſtreets for ſome nights paſt.'—'Aye, pleaſe
'your worſhip,' ſays Sly, ſhrugging up his ſhoulders and grinning, 'I have found them out, to be ſure; and
'well I might; for it was I firſt ſet them on the *lay*.'
'How, Richard! take care of what you ſay.'—'Oh,
'your worſhip, never fear Dick Sly for a ſlippery trick!
'I know what I ſay very well: I have known for ſome
'time that theſe youths have been playing a ſmall game,
'cribbing from the *till*, and building *ſconces*, and ſuch-
'like tricks, that there was no taking hold of; I there-
'fore thought it would be right to bring them to juſ-
'tice, at any rate, and ſo laid the plan of this gang,
'and entered them into the buſineſs myſelf, and now,
'whenever you have a mind to *nab* them, you need
'only take me up, and I can *peach* them all, which
'will be no bad affair, there are ſo many of them.'—
'Why, that is true, Richard; but they have done no-
'thing yet that deſerves ſo ſevere a remedy as the gal-
'lows! therefore let them alone; perhaps they may
'mend: or, if they do not, it will be time enough to
'take them up when they deſerve it more than now.
'To be ſure, your peaching them, who firſt drew them
'in, is not ſo very juſt; but then the law will ſupport

'you in it, and, while a man has the law on his ſide, 'he may laugh at the gallows. And ſo, Richard, have 'a good look-out till theſe youths are ripe for Tyburn, 'and then your harveſt will come!'

It would be endleſs to go through this whole buſineſs particularly. Be it ſufficient to ſay, that there was no breach of the laws, which ſome of his people did not give him an information of, and almoſt all, as accomplices; while his whole care was to conſider, which could turn moſt to his advantage, in the conviction, and to ſettle the evidence againſt them, ſo as it might be ſure not to miſcarry.

CHAP. XXIX.

A highwayman, improperly taken, ſaves his life, by loſing his reaſon. Judicial ſagacity, and eloquence triumphant over common-ſenſe, and matter of fact. This myſtery explained.

WHILE he was in the midſt of this buſineſs, he was ſurpriſed with the news of an highwayman, that moment brought in by a gentleman who had taken him, in the very attempt of robbing him on Turnham Green. This threw the whole houſe into an uproar.—'An highwayman taken, and by the very party!' exclaimed the juſtice, in an agony of rage and vexation. 'This is moſt unfortunate; there is forty pounds dead 'loſs, beſides the ſhame of it: how ſhall I ſupport my 'conſequence, if other people can ſerve the public without 'my aſſiſtance?'

'I wonder who it can be,' ſaid the clerk; 'I ſuppoſe 'the man on the white mare, or the maſk, from Putney 'Common! but, whoever it is, ſomething muſt be done! '*He* muſt be ſaved this time, to ſave *our* credit, and we 'may have him the next ourſelves! Here they come: 'do you keep the gentleman in diſcourſe, while I ſpeak 'to the priſoner, and ſee how he can *come down*. I ſhall 'readily give you your *cue*.'

Juſt then entered the gentleman with his priſoner, whom they directly knew to be an old offender, who had long baffled their purſuit; a circumſtance that heightened

the

the vexation of his being taken by another, and was not a little favourable to him at this time.

His worſhip received the gentleman moſt politely, and deſired him to ſit down a moment, till he ſhould finiſh a letter he was writing to *the ſecretary of ſtate*, and then he would attend to his buſineſs, ordering the priſoner to be removed into another room for the mean time.

He then ſat himſelf down to write with great deliberation, and had *juſt finiſhed*, when his clerk came to deliver him a letter *from the lord mayor*, which he read over attentively, and ſaying it was very well, he then turned to the gentleman, and, aſking his pardon, for making him wait ſo long, ordered the priſoner to be brought in.

The highwayman appeared now a quite different perſon, from what he did when he was in the room a few minutes before; his looks, which were then clouded with the gloom of liſtleſs dejection and deſpair, being inflamed into the fierceſt agitations of phrenſy.

The gentleman ſhewed his ſurpriſe at this change, as did his worſhip his uneaſineſs for his own ſafety, from the fury of ſo outrageous a madman. As ſoon as he was *ſecured*, the juſtice addreſſing himſelf, with the height of judicial ſolemnity, to the proſecutor. 'Pray, Sir,' ſaid he, 'will you pleaſe to inform me what you have to al-'ledge againſt this unhappy perſon?'—'Sir,' replied the gentleman, 'all I have to ſay, is, that he ſtopped 'me this afternoon, upon Turnham Green, and preſent-'ing a piſtol at me, bid me deliver my money; but being 'well armed, and having more about me than I choſe 'to loſe, inſtead of my purſe, I drew a piſtol too, and, 'his miſſing fire, I grappled with, and took him on the 'ſpot, and from thence brought him directly here: that 'is all I have to ſay, Sir!'

'And pray, Sir, what did he ſay when you had taken 'him?'—'Not a word, Sir, nor has he ſpoke a ſyllable 'ſince; nor anſwered any one queſtion he has been aſked.' —'Aye, it is ſo, poor gentleman, it is ſo! And pray, 'Sir, did he make much reſiſtance when you took him?'

—'The

—‘ The utmoſt he was able; but being better mounted,
‘ and much ſtronger than he, I ſoon overpowered him,
‘ though not without great danger; for, after I had him
‘ down, he drew this knife, and very narrowly miſſed
‘ plunging it into my body! You ſee what a cut it
‘ made in my coat and waiſtcoat!’—‘ Aye, poor man,
‘ madneſs is always deſperate: I fear, Sir, you have been
‘ too haſty in this affair.’—‘ How, Sir, too haſty, to
‘ take a man in the very action of highway robbery? I
‘ do not underſtand you, Sir!’

‘ Sir, I mean that this perſon is no robber, but an unhappy
‘ gentleman of family and fortune, who has been for
‘ ſome time out of his mind: I have been applied to by
‘ his relations more than once, to try to have him appre-
‘ hended, that he might be confined; and, now he is
‘ ſecured, they will take proper care of him, that he
‘ ſhall not frighten any body for the future; for I am
‘ ſatisfied, Sir, that was all he meant; and that he would
‘ not have taken your money, had you offered it to him:
‘ I ſuppoſe you ſearched him when you had overpowered
‘ him, poor man, as you juſtly termed it! Pray, Sir, did
‘ you find any thing upon him, to make you think he was
‘ an highwayman? Any watches! jewels! or different
‘ purſes of money? or more money than you might think
‘ it probable a perſon of his appearance might commonly
‘ carry about him.’

‘ No really, Sir, I did not find any thing like what
‘ you mention! This purſe which ſeems to have about
‘ thirty or forty guineas in it (for I have not reckoned
‘ them) was the only thing in all his pockets, except the
‘ knife which he drew on me; his piſtols were openly in
‘ his ſaddle, as gentlemen commonly wear them.’

‘ Very well, and does not his preſent behaviour, and
‘ whole conduct in this affair, convince you, that the
‘ unhappy man could have no felonious intent in his mad
‘ attack upon you? for men, mad as he is, have no in-
‘ tention at all; and, without a felonious intent, there
‘ can be no robbery: but I preſume, you may underſtand
‘ ſomething of the law yourſelf, Sir?’ ‘ No,

'No, indeed, Sir, I cannot ſay I know any more 'law, than juſt not to wrong any perſon nor let them 'wrong me, if I can help it, as far as common-ſenſe 'will direct me: I thank God, I have ſpent my days 'quietly in the country, and never had a diſpute with 'any man in my life.'

'Common-ſenſe, dear Sir! common-ſenſe is a blind 'guide in matters of law! Law and common-ſenſe are 'quite different things; but as I was ſaying, Sir, where 'there is no felonious intent, there can be no felony; 'now robbery is puniſhed only becauſe it is felony, for 'ſo the indictment muſt be laid; *felonice*, Sir, *felonice*, 'or it will not do! The indictment will be quaſhed 'without that word; and who can charge a man with a 'felonious intent, who is diſordered in mind, and can 'have no intention at all? 'Tis true, the appearance 'was bad, and ſufficiently terrifying, to authorize your 'apprehending him: but, as you ſuffered neither loſs 'nor hurt, I cannot ſuppoſe, that a gentleman of your 'humane appearance would deſire to add to the miſery of 'his preſent unhappy condition, that of impriſonment 'till the next ſeſſions, when he muſt be acquitted of courſe, 'as that would certainly make his madneſs for ever incu- 'rable. Whatever expence you have been at in bring- 'ing him here, I will take upon me to reimburſe you 'out of the money in his purſe, beſide what gratification 'you pleaſe to require, for your own time and trouble! 'This, Sir, is what I would recommend to you, as a 'Chriſtian and a gentleman, as you appear to be: but, 'if you are of another opinion, you muſt only ſwear to 'your information, and enter into a recognizance of 'proſecution, while I ſign his *mittimus*, and ſend word 'to his friends, who are people of condition.'

'Indeed, Sir, you judge very rightly of me; I would 'not aggravate the diſtreſs of any human being! If 'you know the unhappy man, and that he is under ſo 'ſevere an affliction, as the loſs of reaſon, I have nothing 'farther to ſay, than that I am ſorry for his misfortune, 'and would not for the world be the cauſe of heightening

'it,

'it, as I had no motive for apprehending him, but the 'duty which I and every member owe the public. I 'thank heaven for my own escape from him, and do not 'desire to make any advantage of it. As to the people 'who assisted me in bringing him hither, they are still 'unpaid, and you know best how to deal with them.— 'So I leave the whole affair to you, and am your hum-'ble servant.'

I have not interrupted this account with any notice of the behaviour of the criminal, as it consisted only of the most outrageous imitation of madness with imprecations and blasphemies, too horrid for repetition.

As soon as the gentleman was gone, and the room cleared of all but the justice, his clerk, and the *madman*, who was left bound to keep up the farce, his worship thus addressed him, 'So, Sir, you thought to reign 'for ever; but you see what your fates have come to? 'I suppose you are surprised at the pains I have taken to 'bring you through this affair!'—'Not at all, Sir,' replied the criminal, 'the bank-note for two hundred pounds 'which I concealed in the sleeve of my coat, and gave 'your clerk.'—'How, Sir,' said the justice in a rage, 'do 'you pretend to say it was upon any such account: But 'you judge of others by yourself. However, I shall 'not stand to argue the matter with you now; you have 'escaped for this time, and may be glad of it; but take 'care for the future: your luck may not always be so 'good.'—'Will your worship please to order your peo-'ple to return my horse and arms? and I hope you 'will give me my purse; for life without something to 'support it is no great obligation.'—'What, Sir! do 'you pretend to capitulate? Your horse you shall have, 'not that you have any right to expect him, but because 'it would not be proper to keep him, after the represen-'tation that imposed upon the fool who took you; and 'here are half a score guineas to carry you to some place where you are not known, and to maintain you 'till you can get into some honest way of earning your 'bread. The rest is little enough to give the people in-

'stead

'ſtead of your horſe, and to ſtop their mouths. You 'may ſtay here till the crowd is diſperſed, when you may 'go where you pleaſe.'—As there was no remedy, the criminal was forced to ſubmit; nor indeed did he ſeem much diſſatisfied at the heavineſs of his compoſition.

CHAP. XXX.

An inſtance of his worſhip's exemplary juſtice on a ſhop-lifter. The unfaſhionable compaſſion and generoſity of a ſailor. A diſpute about ſuperiority of ſkill, between his worſhip and his clerk, open new myſteries in the profeſſion.

IT was now pretty late, and my maſter was juſt retiring to ſupper, pleaſed with having made ſo good a day, when he was ſtopped by more buſineſs. A woman who kept a chandler's ſhop, in the next ſtreet, had dragged before him one of her poor neighbours, whom ſhe had caught in the fact of ſtealing a pound of cheeſe off her counter, as ſhe was reaching a two-penny loaf from the ſhelf: a crime that was heightened by ingratitude too, as ſhe was giving her the loaf on truſt; the thief having owned to her, that ſhe had not a farthing in the world to pay for it, nor a morſel to give her three ſmall children, who had been faſting the whole day.

Enraged at the heinouſneſs of the crime, and at being kept from ſupper, while the chickens and aſparagus were cooling on the table, his worſhip, knitting his brows, and putting on all the magiſtrate, aſked the trembling wretch, with a voice that pierced her ſoul,—'What ſhe had to ſay for herſelf, and whether ſhe was 'guilty of the crime laid to her charge, or not.'—

The poor creature, almoſt dead with wretchedneſs, want, and fear, threw herſelf at his feet, and pouring out a flood of tears, that for ſome moments choaked her utterance, 'O mercy! mercy!' ſaid ſhe, 'for the love 'of the ſweet Jeſus, have mercy on a poor wretch: 'whom want alone compelled to this firſt offence, to 'ſave the lives of three poor infants, who are this mo-'ment periſhing with hunger. Oh! ſend and prove 'the truth of what I ſay; ſend and learn their miſery, 'and it will move you to relieve them, and then I care

'not

'not what becomes of me.'—'Very fine, truly! if we 'admit ſuch excuſes for ſhop-lifting, there will be 'enough ready to plead them. Here, make her *mittimus*; 'ſhe confeſſes the fact; as for her brats, baſtards too, I 'ſuppoſe, let them be ſent to the workhouſe.'—'Oh, 'the poor creatures! they are not baſtards; and they 'have no pariſh to be ſent to. My huſband is a ſailor, 'who was preſſed on board a man of war, ſix years ago, 'and has been in the Weſt-Indies ever ſince, till the 'ſummer, when the ſhip was ordered home to be laid 'up. Poor ſoul! he thought they ſhould be paid off, 'and ſo wrote me word to Corke to come to him, for 'he meant to go and ſettle in Scotland, his own coun-'try; but the moment he came to Portſmouth, he was 'turned over into another ſhip, without getting a ſhilling 'of his ſix years wages or prize-money, and ſent away 'directly to America; ſo that after ſpending every 'penny I had in the world, to come to him from Ire-'land, as he deſired, I am left here with my poor 'children to ſtarve in a ſtrange place, where nobody 'has any compaſſion for me, though my huſband wrote 'me word, that he had above three hundred pounds 'due to him for wages and prize-money; here is his 'letter: I never go without it; it is all the comfort I 'have in my diſtreſs.'

'Aye, I thought ſo! I thought you were one of thoſe 'Iriſh thieves that came to rob us, and cut our throats; 'but I ſhall take care of you; I ſhall make you wiſh 'you had continued eating potatoes at home. I wiſh 'I could provide as well for every one of your country; 'we ſhall never be well till we have hanged you all.'—'Oh, good your worſhip; I am no thief, I never ſtole 'any thing before, and this woman, who has brought 'me before you, knows the truth of every thing I have 'told your worſhip; and that I have always paid her 'honeſtly while I had a penny in the world, for I have 'dealt with her ever ſince I came to London; but hun-'ger, and the cries of three ſtarving children, forced me 'to this! oh my children, my children!'—'Peace, wo-

'man! All you can ſay ſignifies nothing: you were 'taken in the fact, and to Newgate you ſhall go directly. 'And as for your brats, it is better for them to die of 'hunger now, than to live to be hanged like their mo-'ther.'

By this time the mittimus was ready, which he ſigned without the leaſt heſitation or pity, and then hurried away to his ſupper, having almoſt fretted his bowels out, to think it was ſpoiled by waiting ſo long.

But though the juſtice's compaſſion could not be moved by ſuch a *poor* wretch, his clerk was not ſo inexorable, but yielded to the perſuaſion of an honeſt tar, who ſeeing a crowd at the door, had given ſixpence to go in and ſee the fun; and for two guineas, *which barely paid his fees*, ventured to make up the affair, and let her go about her buſineſs, though he did not know what might be the conſequence, if it ſhould come to his worſhip's knowledge. Jack took no notice of what he ſaid, but taking the poor creature, who was juſt ſinking under the agitations of fear, joy, and gratitude, by the hand—'Cheer away, 'ſiſter, ſiſter,' ſaid he, 'cheer away: we'll bring up all 'this lee way next trip. Damn my eyes and limbs if 'I'll ſee a brother ſeaman's family at ſhort allowance, 'while I have a ſhilling. Come, heave a-head; I'll rig 'and victual you and your children, againſt your huſ-'band comes, to man you for a voyage home. I'll 'ſwing my hammock in the next birth, and you ſhall 'cook the kettle, while I ſtay aſhore.' Saying which words he led her off in triumph. This the clerk told his worſhip, when he came in to ſupper, giving him one of the guineas, as his ſhare of the compoſition.

I now thought the buſineſs of the day over, and was preparing to take a view of my new maſter's heart, while he and his clerk were enjoying their ſucceſs over an hearty bottle. But I was prevented by an accident, which diſturbed for a while, and had like to have entirely broken off, this harmony between them; a diſpute, like thoſe between all conquerors, ariſing about the diviſion of the ſpoil, and the merits in the acquiſition of it.

'This

'This will do,' said his worship, clapping his hands a-kimbo, after a full glass, 'this will do! what between 'the bawd in the morning, and the highwayman in the 'afternoon, we have made a noble day of it! But what 'have you ordered about that fellow? I hope you have 'taken care that we may have him ourselves next.'— 'Never fear,' replied the clerk, 'I have done for him: 'I have sent people to *lay* all the roads he can go, from 'the inn where he ordered his horse; and *plausible Tom* 'is fixed there to scrape an acquaintance with him, so 'that he cannot escape.'

'Aye, let Tom alone to manage him; many a cunning fellow's heart has that Tom crept into, till he 'has weedled him to Tyburn! Not a lawyer of them 'all has a smoother tongue. But did not I improve the 'hint of his madness well? How quietly the gudgeon 'swallowed it! Had I set about it, I believe in my 'soul, I could have persuaded him out of his own senses, 'and made him think himself mad, as well as the highwayman: ha! ha! ha! though you were not quite 'clear enough in your note; you should have told me 'all the particulars; I was often at a loss; but upon 'the whole, I think I did pretty well; pretty well I 'think.'

'Why aye, you did manage it pretty well when I had 'given you the *cue*, and so might any one have done. 'But how would you have contrived to bring him off, 'if I had not made that hit?'

'How?—why easily enough! I would have——But 'what have you done with the bank note? Let me see 'that.'—'The note! It is safe enough. But you do 'not tell me how you would have managed to have earned 'it; I think you should do that before you ask for it.' '—How I would have earned it? Why pray, good sir, 'do you know whom you talk to in this manner?'— 'Whom I talk to? I talk to the worshipful justice, 'whose betters I have talked to before now; and who 'would not have asked me that question some years ago, 'when he applied to me to instruct him in the business

'of his office!'—'Inſolence! Inſtruct me! I'll make
'you know, ſir, that I underſtand my buſineſs without
'your inſtruction. I'll take another clerk to-morrow.'
'—With all my heart, good maſter juſtice, with all my
'heart; and ſee who will be the loſer by that. If you
'do not know it yet, you will ſoon learn then, whether
'the buſineſs comes to the juſtice or his clerk, for I
'give you notice, that I ſhall take all the *people* with
'me; you ſhall have the credit of making a new *ſet* for
'yourſelf, I aſſure you.'

'Very fin, very fine treatment this!'—'Why do
'you deſerve it then, ſir, if you do not like it? I ſay
'very fine treatment too! that you ſhould take upon
'you to undervalue my ſkill, and aſſume the credit of
'it to yourſelf; you, whom I firſt taught, and ſtill ſup-
'port in your office, in deſpite of all your blunders!—
'As for the bank note, here it is, and here it ſhall be,
'till we have ſettled the account of the laſt ſeſſions, when
'you were ſo clever upon me, ſending me on a fool's er-
'rand out of the way, while you took up the reward.
'Perhaps you thought I did not ſee through your de-
'ſign, or that I was afraid to ſpeak of it; but you
'were quite miſtaken; I only waited till the remedy
'ſhould come into my own hands, and now it has, be
'aſſured I ſhall make uſe of it, whatever you may think
'Sir? and farther let me tell you, that if you ſay much
'more, I will think of parting in earneſt, if you do not
'think proper to come to a new agreement; for I ſee
'no reaſon why you ſhould carry off two thirds of the
'profit only becauſe you are *juſtice* indeed, though I do
'all the buſineſs!'

CHAP. XXXI.

The breach happily made up by the arrival of company. The evening concluded in character. His worſhip goes next morning to hear a charity ſermon, and from thence to eat a charity feaſt, where Chryſal enters into a new ſervice. Some account of the nature of a charity feaſt.

MATTERS were now at ſuch an height, that I every minute expected they would have proceeded

from

from words to blows, when a ring at the bell brought them both to themſelves in an inſtant.

'Ah! that is true! this is quarter-night,' ſaid the juſtice, 'and here the ladies are come! give me your 'hand: why ſhould we fall out about our ſkill, when 'the buſineſs goes on well? here's my ſervice to you; 'and let there be no more of it.'—

'With all my heart,' replied the clerk, 'but why 'will you urge me on thus, when you know that I can-'not bear to have my ſkill called in queſtion.'

By this time the ladies entered, whom I directly ſaw to be the *commode* matrons, and compliant fair, of this diſtrict, who came duly to compound with him, for the breach of thoſe laws he was appointed to ſupport.

The very mention of this ſcene ſufficiently explains the nature of it, and makes a more particular deſcription unneceſſary. All parties behaved properly on the occaſion. *They* paid their ſubſidies, for which he returned them very wholeſome advice, to behave with diligence and diſcretion in their profeſſions; and eſpecially thoſe who lived in his neighbourhood, he cautioned to avoid all riots and cauſes of offence, which might bring his connivance and protection into ſuſpicion; then relaxing from the ſeverity of his morals, he gave up the reſt of the night, and a good part of the next morning, to mirth and good fellowſhip, in the company of a few of his particular favourites, and beſt cuſtomers of this motly ſet, having diſmiſſed the reſt to the purſuit of their occupations.

The buſineſs of the day, and pleaſures of the night, had ſo far exhauſted his ſpirits, that nature required a long pauſe: accordingly, no buſineſs coming in to diſturb him, (for ſuch was his vigilance in his office, and care for the public, that every thing gave way to that) he made a late morning, not waking till he was called to attend a ſermon and dinner, which were to be that day, for the benefit of a charity, to which he was a conſtant benefactor; as indeed his public ſpirit made him to all that were already eſtabliſhed, and prompted him to ſtrike out many new; in which, as the author of them, he hoped to

have the management, while novelty ſhould make it the faſhion to ſupport them.

But in this he was always diſappointed. For though, in the multitude of his ſchemes, he ſometimes ſtumbled upon a good one, yet his head was ſo confuſed, and his notions ſo wild and immethodical, that before he could digeſt his plans into any regularity, ſome one elſe took up the hint, and ran away with the credit of the deſign.

At church he *edified* greatly, by a comfortable *nap*, during the ſermon, which finiſhed his refreſhment, and ſent him with a clear head, and keen ſtomach, to the feaſt, where every perſon ſeemed to vie in demonſtrating his attachment to the cauſe of their meeting, by the quantity he eat and drank.

I here changed my ſervice once more, being given by his worſhip to the ſubſcription, and ſo came into the poſſeſſion of a community in general, which gave me an opportunity of ſeeing the human heart in a more complicated view, than perhaps any other ſcene of its actions could afford; as there was hardly a profeſſion, degree, or rank of life, which had not a repreſentative in this meeting; nor a motive of action, however apparently contrary to its deſign, or contradictory to each other, which did not contribute its influence to the bringing them together.

While I lay in the hands of the treaſurer of the charity, unaſſigned to any particular uſe, or perſon, I enjoyed a ſtate of liberty; ſomething like that of living in a commonwealth, having it in my power to enter into the hearts of all the governors (who were now my owners) as I liked, and to make any obſervations, without reſtraint to any particular perſon, time, or place.

Charity is the moſt amiable and moſt exalted of the human virtues, and that which riſes to the neareſt imitation of the divine. Nor can any thing be a ſtronger proof of the beneficence of the author of the human nature, than his placing this virtue, which is the perfection of it, within the reach of every individual.

For charity is a diſpoſition to think well of, and do

well

well to every other human being, without partiality, prejudice, or reſpect to any other motive, than this univerſal duty; giving of alms being no more than one, and that perhaps the very meaneſt effect of it.

But this extenſiveneſs of the nature of charity is the reaſon of its being generally miſconceived, and moſt erroneouſly confined to this effect by minds unable to comprehend its greater excellence; and, from this miſtake, have proceeded many of the extraordinary inſtances of this effect of charity, which diſtinguiſhes the preſent age.

This is a moſt dangerous error; it is too like thinking to bribe heaven with the wages of hell; and yet, profanely abſurd as ſuch a notion is, daily obſervation ſhews the extenſive prevalence of it.

As charity is ſuch a refined and exalted virtue, and purely ſpiritual, it muſt appear ſtrange to you how it ſhould enter into the head of man, to make ſo groſs, dull, and ſenſual a paſſion as eating, the foundation of it! Indeed ſo unnatural is the thought to pure ſpeculation, unacquainted with the perverſions of life, that a charity feaſt, in the literal meaning of the phraſe, muſt be taken for a meeting of the poor, to eat the proviſions ſupplied for them by the rich, inſtead of the rich meeting to gorge their own appetites.

But a little obſervation on the preſent bias of the world will ſolve this difficulty. Of all the *natural* appetites and paſſions, which poſſeſs that part of mankind, whoſe age has enabled them to amaſs money enough to give away, eating is the moſt univerſal. I ſay natural paſſions, for fraud, avarice, or ambition, or even luſt, at that time of life, are not the paſſions of nature.

To gratify this, therefore, was the moſt probable ſcheme for drawing them together: and, when that is ſufficiently done, the full heart opens eaſily, and ſhares its abundance with the empty.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXII.

A representation of the company. The history of one of the principal members. The modern method of bribing heaven with the wages of hell.

THEY *had feasted, nor did their minds yet require such another banquet**, when I became a member of their society; you must not expect a particular account or description of such a scene. A few general hints must satisfy your curiosity, as I have told you on other occasions.

Let your imagination represent to you a number of people, whose highest pleasure is eating, seated at a large table, covered with all the delicacies, all the rarities of the season, in a plenty that promised satiety to the keenest appetites. But I must stop! I see the very thought has an effect upon you, that savours too strongly of sensuality, and might, if not checked, put a stop to our conversation, by some human hankerings. Let us therefore pass over such a scene, and turn our observation to the company as they sat after the fragments of the feast were removed. And here it will be proper to have recourse to the expedient we made use of before, and, holding up the mirror to imagination, view the whole scene as if actually present.

Observe, then, that enormous bulk of flesh, that sits at the head of the table, with his waistcoat all unbuttoned, and gasping for breath; the distention of his stomach having left his lungs scarce room to perform the animal functions, and his fat almost choaked the passages of vital air.

He is one of the principal supporters of this and every other public charity, founded on the modern method of a feast; the natural avarice of his heart outwitting itself in this instance; for as he is sure of satiating his appetite with more and better victuals and wine, at these meetings, than he could have at home for much more than the price of the ticket, the advantage of that bargain always tempts him to go; and then the happiness of his heart, in the fulness of his stomach, opens his purse, and

he

* Homer.

he ſubſcribes with a liberality that ariſes almoſt to profuſion.

But look into his heart, and read the reſt of his life: the very money which he beſtows with ſuch an appearance of virtue, on this beſt of uſes (for no error in motive, or manner, muſt take off the merit of an action that does good) this very money, I ſay, has perhaps been acquired by vices the moſt oppoſite to the virtues it is applied to.

The greateſt frugality, application, and ſkill in the myſterious buſineſs of a ſcrivener, have raiſed this perſon from the moſt abject poverty, to affluence, above the moderation of a rational wiſh. But ſo powerful is the force of habit, that though the cauſe has been long ſince removed, the effect ſtill remains, and he perſiſts to ſave and heap up money, by all the mean and iniquitous ways which want firſt ſuggeſted to him. One inſtance, and that not ſingular in him, will give you a ſufficient inſight into his character.

A gentleman whom indiſcretion and indolence of temper had involved in ſome pecuniary diſtreſſes, had the greater misfortune, ſome years ago, to be recommended to this perſon, to borrow ſuch a ſum of money as ſhould extricate him from his immediate difficulties, on a mortgage of his eſtate.

As his ſecurity was good, his buſineſs was ſoon done; but the convenience of his eſtate to another which the perſon had lately purchaſed in his neighbourhood, and an acquaintance with the unwary eaſineſs of his diſpoſition, made him caſt a wiſhful eye upon it, and form ſchemes for getting it abſolutely into his poſſeſſion.

At firſt he ſtrove to tempt his indiſcretion by the offer of more money to ſupply his pleaſures; but finding that would not take, and that the ſenſe of his former extravagances dwelt ſo ſtrongly on him, as to give his mind a kind of turn to induſtry, did he know how to apply it, his ready genius ſtruck out a method, that he imagined could not fail of ſucceſs.

He therefore cultivated an intimacy with the gentleman, in which, upon all occaſions, he affected to boaſt of his

own

own ſucceſs in life, and to attribute it to his having always a command of money to take the advantage of any bargain that might offer.

As this turn of converſation ſeemed to flow only from the fulneſs of his heart, and to be free from all deſign, it had the effect he propoſed, and raiſed a deſire in his friend to follow a method which had been ſo ſucceſsful with him. He therefore one day communicated to him a reſolution which he had formed of ſelling his eſtate, and applying the money to buſineſs; and deſired his friend's aſſiſtance to execute his deſign. After an appearance of ſurpriſe, the ſcrivener teſtified his pleaſure and approbation of his prudence, by the readineſs with which he undertook to ſerve him.

The eaſe with which the firſt part of his ſcheme had ſucceeded, made him form further hopes, and think of getting the eſtate he deſired even at a cheaper rate than purchaſing it.

After ſome time ſpent, as he ſaid, in fruitleſs inquiries for a purchaſer, he moſt artfully drew his friend to deſire that he would buy it himſelf: at firſt he ſeemed to heſitate, but then, as it were yielding to the impulſe of his friendſhip, he concluded a bargain for it, on terms evidently advantageous to the ſeller.

All things being agreed upon, the parties met to conclude the affair; when the writings being read over, and the money lying on the table, while the ſcrivener told it, the gentleman executed the deeds of conveyance, and receipt before proper witneſſes, who withdrew as ſoon as they had ſigned them.

In the mean time the ſcrivener continued to tell the money, till a ſervant entered haſtily with a letter, as from a lord, who was one of his beſt clients, and deſired to ſee him that moment. The difficulty this threw him into was ſoon ſolved by his friend's compliance to defer his buſineſs for a few hours, as the lord's urgency would not admit the leaſt delay. Accordingly, he put up both the deeds and money, in all the apparent confuſion of hurry, and went away to his lordſhip. Next

Next morning the gentleman called to receive the price of his eſtate, but his friend was not at home, nor to be ſpoken with in the afternoon, for his turn was now ſerved, and he neither deſired, nor perhaps thought it ſafe, to keep up any farther acquaintance with him.

As ſuch things might happen to a man in buſineſs, the gentleman took no notice of them, but quietly ſwallowed the ſame excuſes for ſome days ſucceſſively. At length his patience began to be exhauſted, and his fears alarmed at a behaviour ſo ſtrange, and contrary to that height of intimacy that had ſubſiſted between them, even were there no buſineſs in the caſe.

In this perplexity he went one morning, reſolving not to quit the houſe till he ſhould ſee him, and when a meſſage to that purpoſe was, after long attendance, complied with, upon a warm expoſtulation, he received for anſwer, from his *friend*, that, 'He had been of late too 'much engaged in affairs of conſequence to attend com- 'pliments, and knew not any buſineſs he could have 'with him.'

'Not know my buſineſs ſir,' replied the gentleman in aſtoniſhment, 'I come, ſir, for my money, and ſhall 'hereafter never trouble you more with buſineſs or com- 'pliment.'—'Your money, ſir! I do not underſtand 'you: Pray, ſir, what money do you mean?'—'What 'money! the purchaſe money of my eſtate, ſir, which 'you were to have paid me above a week ago, when I 'ſigned the deeds of ſale.'—'Poor gentleman, it is ſo! 'as I was informed, and always feared. He has loſt his 'reaſon, and I ſhould not ſeem much better to truſt my- 'ſelf longer with a man in his condition.'—'Take care, 'ſir, this is too tender a point to be trifled with: you 'almoſt make me mad!'—'Aye, there it is: he is mad, 'poor man, and is even ſenſible of it himſelf!'—'Death, 'ſir, do not dare to dally with me a moment longer! 'anſwer me directly! pay me my money! and do not 'really provoke me to a madneſs that may be fatal to us 'both.'—'Sir, your madneſs, or reaſon, is nothing to 'me: however I will anſwer you directly, that I owe

'you

'you no money, and none will I pay you. As for the 'purchaſe money of your eſtate, your parting with which 'I ſee has turned your brain, when you come to your-'ſelf, you will recollect that I paid it to you when I ex-'ecuted the deeds of ſale; or if you do not remember 'it, your own receipt, properly witneſſed, will prove it 'for me, and I deſire no more: and therefore, ſir, let 'me have no further trouble with you, if you do not 'chuſe to take up your lodgings in Moorfields.'

'This is too much; juſt heaven! this is too much: 'too much for human patience to endure! or wait the 'law's delay for remedy! I will avenge myſelf, aſſert 'the cauſe of juſtice, and rid the groaning world of 'ſuch a monſter!' (exclaimed the unhappy gentleman) now really irritated into the extremity of that phrenzy which the other only wanted to impoſe upon him, and drawing his ſword, before the wretch could call for help, or take any method of defence, he plunged it through his body.

His ſhrieks ſoon alarmed his ſervants, who, ruſhing in, found him weltering in his blood, and the madman ſmiling, in the abſence of frantic extaſy, over him, and incapable of attention to any other circumſtance, though ſome of them dragged him before a magiſtrate, while the reſt were buſied in procuring relief for their maſter.

The madman was committed to priſon, to wait the event of the wound he had given, which heaven, to let the meaſure of the ſcrivener's iniquity be full, had directed to a part where it was not mortal.

In a word, he recovered, though not to a ſenſe of juſtice or humanity, but perſiſting in his iniquity, which now was ſharpened by a ſpirit of revenge, for what he had endured, the firſt effort of his health, was to have the unhappy ſufferer confined in Bedlam, where he ſtill languiſhes under all the horrors that attend a total loſs of reaſon, without relief or even compaſſion, from his baſe undoer; who, this very morning, as he was ſtepping into his chariot, to come to this *charity feaſt*, ſpurned from him with his foot, and refuſed the ſmalleſt alms

to

to the wretched wife of the ruined madman, who begs in the common ſtreets, and was driven, by miſery and deſpair, to throw herſelf even at his feet, to implore relief.

I ſee your abhorrence riſe at ſuch a monſter, but how will wonder even heighten it, when I tell you, that this oppreſſor has neither child, nor kinſman to inherit his wealth: for he was himſelf a foundling, and reared at the public expence, without the knowledge or tenderneſs of a parent, to ſoften his rugged ſoul; nor would the ſelfiſhneſs of his heart ever permit him to marry, for fear of the expence of a family; but he is this moment meditating on ſome oſtentatious ſcheme of charity, to the foundation of which, he deſigns to dedicate the wealth which he has amaſſed by ſuch villanies.

CHAP. XXXIII.

Continued: The hiſtory of a general almoner. His method of making charity begin at home. He converts a noted bawd, but diſappoints his deſigns, by too great confidence in his own ſkill. The character of a clergyman.

MOVE your eye to the left, and view that demure-looking picture of devotion, who ſits there in ſilence, lifting up his eyes to heaven, and ſighing in ſpirit, at the feſtivity and ſenſual converſation round him.

Who, that can ſee no deeper than outward appearances, would not think that man ſincere in his profeſſions of religion and virtue? whereas, in truth, he is the moſt abandoned contemner of both; and deepens the dye of his blackeſt crimes by the moſt hardened hypocriſy, ſecretly living on the practice of thoſe very vices, of which he profeſſes the greateſt abhorrence.

With all that conſequence, which he aſſumes in the direction of this charity, on the merit of the largeneſs of his ſubſcription to it, in reality, he is but the diſpenſer of other people's benefactions, into whoſe good opinion he ſo inſinuates himſelf, by his pretended piety, that they intruſt their charity to his diſpoſal, who always pays himſelf for his trouble, by ſubducting largely, from the ſums confided to him. For, as real charity vaunteth not itſelf, they never divulge the ſecret, com-

pletely impoſed on by his addreſs, that never lets one half of his contributors know of the other; by which management, as the ſums he gives are always made public, for example and imitation, each thinks that *he* adds moſt liberally to his own donation. But this is not the only method by which he turns his piety to advantage. The acceſs which the reputation of it gains him in almoſt every family, opens to him an opportunity of carrying on the deepeſt intrigues, and becoming a pander for vices both natural and unnatural, which the intereſt of the parties concerned makes them ſtill keep ſecret. As for the former, the myſtery of that trade has been in part explained already; and the latter is too horrible for explanation. I ſhall therefore paſs over thoſe ſcenes, and conclude my account of this extraordinary perſonage, with one inſtance of his addreſs, in finding out and managing the weak ſide of ſuperſtition and vice.

In the courſe of his love negotiations, he had made an acquaintance with a woman who kept a public *bagnio*, or houſe of proſtitution, which acquaintance mutual intereſt cemented into an intimacy. In this moſt infamous trade had this woman amaſſed conſiderable wealth, the diſpoſal of which (after her death) took up much of her thoughts, in thoſe moments, when the conſequences of her debauched life forced her to think of dying.

As the ſecrets of their trade had removed every reſerve from between them, ſhe often uſed to conſult him upon this head; when he always comforted her with diſſertations upon religion and virtue, ſtripping them of the vain incumbrances of prieſtcraft, and bringing them back to their genuine principles of benevolence and charity.

Frequent inculcations of this doctrine had the effect he deſigned; the matron was pleaſed with thought of having all the benefit of religion, without the trouble of the practice, and immediately began to exerciſe her donations to public charities, which, as it was not quite ſo much in character for her to offer in perſon,

while

while she continued her profession, and she saw no necessity, nor felt inclination to quit that, she always confided to the distribution of her spiritual guide.

Nor did his success stop here; he improved his influence on her superstition so far, that he prevailed on her to compound with heaven for the vices of her life, by bequeathing the earnings of them to its use, after her death.

For this purpose he himself drew her will, which pious application of her fortune, set her conscience at ease; and she continued her usual business to the hour of her death, which happened three years after, with such care and industry, that some instance of negligence in one of her servants administering to the pleasure of her guests, gave her such uneasiness in her last moments, that, with her dying breath, she lamented the ruin her house must come to, after she should quit the care of it, for the joys of heaven.

You must not think that his design extended no farther than to prevail on her to make such a will; he had drawn it himself, as I have told you, and took care to word it in such a manner, as he thought should give him, under the appearance of her executor and trustee, as she designed him, a real property in her wealth; as it was immediately to come into his hands, on her death, and there was no time appointed for the fulfilling her pious intentions.

But here his sagacity disappointed itself: for neglecting to take proper advice, or afraid of making any person privy to his designs, he had committed such *material* errors in the *form* of the will, as gave room to learned counsel to set it aside, in favour of the heir at law, her nephew, who, from cleaning shoes under a gateway, was enriched with at least a third part of his aunt's fortune, which remained to him, after the costs of the suit that had been carried on for him, *in formâ pauperis*, while her executor had the vexation of disappointment aggravated by a decree *to pay all the cost*.—This was a severe stroke: but it did not break his spirit,

rit, though it obliged him to return to his former occupation of an *almoner*, which you ſee he purſues with that attention which always inſures ſucceſs.

I ſee you ſink under the pain of finding the beſt actions debaſed, by ſpringing from ſuch motives; but be careful to avoid an error, fatally too prevalent, of concluding from the abuſe, againſt the uſe of any thing that may, in its end, be conducive to good.

Theſe inſtances I have given; and I could add many more; not to depreciate the cuſtom of giving to public charities, which is the nobleſt uſe of wealth; but to caution you againſt the dangerous error of thinking, that ſuch giving alone, without reformation of life, and the active practice of the other virtues, can be acceptable in the ſight of him to whom it is offered, or efficacious to procure his favour: and to ſhew the abſurd impiety of perſiſting in vice, with a vain hope of bribing heaven with the wages of hell.

But to relieve your pain, behold that venerable perſon who ſits oppoſite to him; the ſerenity of whoſe looks ſhews the happineſs of his mind. Read his heart, and you will not find one diſcontent or ſorrow there, but what humanity imprints for the diſtreſſes of his fellow-creatures, which his beneficence, his real charity, is for ever finding methods to relieve, not only by pecuniary benefactions, though to theſe is devoted the far greater part of his ample fortune, but alſo by his advice, inſtruction and good office, the judicious application and ſincerity of which makes them very rarely fail of ſucceſs. He is a real ſupporter of charity in its moſt extenſive ſenſe? his example giving a ſanction, a ſeal of virtue, to every thing he appears in, which puts wicked wit out of countenance, and ſtops the tongue of calumny; and is, (even were it alone) ſufficient to counterbalance all the inſtances which could be brought againſt it. His long life, which has been extended by heaven, as a bleſſing to mankind, has been a conſtant illuſtration of the religion he teaches; not one inſtance of his actions

ever

ever contradicting his profeſſion, as near as human weakneſs can act up to divine perfection.

Such is this clergyman! ſuch ſhould all clergymen be, to preſerve the purity, the dignity of a function, whoſe rules are drawn from perfection, and calculated to prepare the human for a participation of the divine nature; to accompliſh which greateſt end, all profeſſion, not enforced by practice, muſt be ineffectual.

To mention any one inſtance of his good works would be doing injuſtice to the reſt, and contradicting the deſire of his heart, which next to doing good, is to conceal what he does, his actions being ſo far from oſtentation, that to heaven only, and the parties themſelves, are they revealed; nor to theſe even is the hand that reaches them the bleſſing always known.

CHAP. XXXIV.

Continued: The hiſtory of a bear-leader. His method of making his pupil's maſters earn their money. The general conſequence of cloſe friendſhips between the different ſexes. He modeſtly offers his pupil's mother a nut almoſt too hard for her liquoriſh tooth: but ſhe ſwallows it whole, to ſave the trouble of mumbling, and meets a juſt return for her untimely paſſion.

OPPOSITE to him, you ſee a man, whoſe rich dreſs and ſupercilious carriage give him the appearance of a ſuperiority to all the reſt of the company; but ſuch artifices impoſe only upon the ignorant and vulgar: to a judicious eye they aggravate the defects they are meant to diſguiſe; and the low-bred avaricious wretch appears doubly contemptible, through the unnatural veil of pride and munificence.

There is ſomething ſo whimſically ſingular in the ſtory of this perſon, that I will gratify your curioſity with a ſhort ſketch of it.

He was born in the loweſt claſs of the people, in a poor village, in one of the moſt remote parts of the kingdom: but the delicacy of his conſtitution making him unfit for a life of labour, the common lot of his condition, his poor parents denied themſelves almoſt the

neceſſaries of life to ſend him to ſchool, to qualify him for ſome employment better ſuited to his natural imbecility. The maſter of the ſchool, who was a perſon of diſcernment and good nature, ſoon perceived that the weakneſs of his body was amply made up by the abilities of his mind, and took a pleaſure in giving inſtruction which he ſaw received with advantage. Nor did he ſtop here; but, when his pupil had made the ordinary progreſs of the ſchool, he uſed the perſuaſive argument of teaching him for nothing, and even ſupplying him with books at his own expence, to prevail upon his parents to let him purſue his ſtudies.

When he had advanced by this aſſiſtance, conſiderably beyond the uſual boundaries of ſchool-education, being not only critically ſkilled in the learned languages, but alſo well grounded in the principles of the liberal ſciences, his kind maſter crowned the benefits he had conferred upon him, by recommending him warmly to a widow lady, of large fortune, to educate her only ſon, whom female fondneſs would not permit her to truſt out of her ſight at a public ſchool.

In this employment he behaved himſelf with ſuch circumſpection and care (for the weakneſs of his conſtitution ſaved him from all danger of exceſs, and the horrors of returning to his former poverty and diſtreſs, fixed his attention, invariably, to every poſſible means of advancing his fortune) that he won the confidence of his pupil's mother ſo far, that ſhe ventured to ſend her darling ſon to the univerſity in his care; and when he had finiſhed his ſtudies there, with credit gave him a genteel ſtipend, to accompany him in his travels to the different courts of Europe, to complete an education ſo happily begun, and enable him to make a figure in life, ſuitable to the affluence of his fortune.

The unbounded confidence with which this truſt was committed to him, gave him ſufficient opportunities of gratifying the ruling paſſions of his heart, vanity and avarice, as it enabled him to ſecrete, to his own uſe, as much as he pleaſed of his pupil's fortune, ſatisfied that

his

his accounts would never be examined; and to acquire, late as it was, the ornamental parts of education, which his original poverty, and the neceſſary gravity of his literary life and employment had precluded him from.

Accordingly, as ſoon as he arrived in Paris, the firſt place where he deſigned to make any delay, he ſuffered himſelf to be prevailed upon by his pupil, to remit ſomething of the ſtrictneſs of his authority, and, ſeemingly, winked at his plunging into all the levities and exceſſes of unguarded youth, that he might have the more convenient opportunity for executing his own ſchemes. Thus, while his abuſed charge threw away the time he ought to have ſpent in receiving profitable information and improvement, in idle expence and vicious pleaſures, the prudent tutor took the advantage of his abſence, to attend the maſters he retained for him, and learn dancing, fencing, muſic, and all the other accompliſhments of polite education; a conduct which he carefully obſerved, in all the different ſtages of their travels. But ſtill his labour, as you ſee, was for the moſt part in vain, the ruſt of his mean original being too ſtrongly confirmed, to be worn off by ſo late application, ſo that his awkward affectation only makes defects, which would otherwiſe have paſſed unnoticed, become more viſible, and expoſes him to contempt and ridicule.

But, eager as he was in theſe favourite purſuits, he did not let them divert his attention from the main point, of continuing to cultivate the good opinion and confidence of his pupil's mother, to whom he conſtantly wrote in ſuch a ſtrain of piety, and gave ſuch pleaſing accounts of her ſon's conduct, expatiating on his good qualities, and palliating his failings, with the tender titles of youthful levity, and the frailty of nature (for fear ſhe ſhould receive information of his exceſſes from any other perſon) that ſhe thought herſelf happy in having placed him under a man of ſuch virtue and goodneſs; her opinion of which was not a little heightened by the care he took of his parents, to whom he conſtantly remitted, through her hands, ſuch a portion of his ſtipend, as enabled them to

live with comfort; and with his former maſter he kept up a regular correſpondence, informing him of every thing he ſaw in his travels, that he thought would be agreeable and entertaining to him, and expreſſing his gratitude for the friendſhip which had advanced him ſo happily in life.

When his pupil had finiſhed his travels in this manner, they returned home, where the fond mother received them with the higheſt joy, her eſteem for the tutor almoſt equalling her love for her ſon. But this natural affection did not long maintain the pre-eminence! Her eſtabliſhed opinion of the underſtanding, learning, and virtue of the former, levelled the height from which difference of condition had made her look down upon him before, and ſhe admitted him into all the intimacy of friendſhip. There is nothing more deceitful than connexions of this kind between the different ſexes. Let them be formed with whatever reſolutions they will, at firſt, nature will inſenſibly take the alarm, and force the execution of her moſt powerful laws.

This intimacy had not been long cultivated before the lady began to ſee perfections in her new friend, which ſhe had never perceived before, and to feel a pleaſure in his converſation which her heart had long been a ſtranger to. She knew not how it was, but nothing pleaſed her except what he ſaid, or did: even her fondneſs for her ſon began to cool, and her eyes to open to faults in him, which ſhe had always been blind to before, though he had never taken any pains to conceal them from her.—This did not eſcape the penetration of her friend a moment, nor was his judgment at a loſs how to improve it to the beſt advantage. He immediately began to aſſume a timid tenderneſs in his looks and manner, and took every occaſion of diſplaying the genteel accompliſhments he had acquired in his travels, while her unhappy ſon, as if he had entered into the ſcheme againſt himſelf, ſeldom came near her, and when he did, behaved with a careleſs indifference, ſcarce ſhort of rudeneſs and inſult.

Such a contraſt was too ſtriking to paſs unnoticed: nor did her friend fail to aggravate the impreſſions of it,

by

by doubling his aſſiduity and tender complaiſance, whenever his former pupil withdrew, and lamenting the unhappy turn he had taken in terms of the deepeſt concern, but without ever offering a word in his excuſe.

This ſubtle conduct had the deſired effect: the love of the mother was entirely diverted from her ſon to her friend; and as the fooliſh fondneſs of her deceaſed huſband had left much the greater part of his large fortune in her power, the improvement of this change was an object worthy of his higheſt attention. But ſtill the difficulty upon both was, how to open the affair; for, powerful as the different motives that urged them to bring it to a concluſion were, a ſenſe of the impropriety of ſuch an action, made them equally at a loſs how to mention it.

But here again the evil genius of the ſon prevailed, and he did that for them which they knew not how to do themſelves. For ſome of his friends obſerving the intimacy between his mother and his former tutor, deſired him to be upon his guard, and ſtrive to prevent the conſequences of it, by a change in his behaviour to her. Such prudent advice, if properly followed, might probably have had effect. But inſtead of that, he flew immediately to his mother, and indiſcreetly charged her with a deſign of betraying the confidence of his father, and ruining him, to gratify a ridiculous paſſion for a mean unworthy object; and then turning to him, who happened to be preſent, he told him fiercely, that, if he did not that inſtant quit his mother's houſe, he would treat him as the villainy of ſuch a deſign deſerved, in the next place he ſhould ever meet him; and ſo flung out of the room in the higheſt rage, leaving them ſtaring at each other, and almoſt petrified with aſtoniſhment.

But a few moments reſtored them to themſelves! The affair was now revealed, and ſo the greateſt difficulty over. 'I wiſh,' ſaid the tutor, as if he ſpoke to his former pupil, though he took care to wait till he heard him out of the houſe: 'I wiſh no other perſon beſide *me* had 'reaſon to fear your reſentment; or that I had no other

'obſtacle

'obſtacle but that, to prevent the happineſs my heart 'languiſhes for.' And then turning to the lady, as if he did not know that ſhe had heard what he had ſaid, 'I am moſt unhappy, madam,' proceeded he, 'to find 'myſelf the cauſe of your being treated in this manner, 'and ſhall immediately withdraw, to prevent a repetition 'of it; as for me, ſince I am to loſe the happineſs of your 'converſation, it matters not what becomes of me!'—Saying which, he made her a moſt reſpectful bow, and with a look of the higheſt tenderneſs and grief, ſeemed to prepare to leave the room.

'Hold, Sir,' exclaimed the lady, the warmth of whoſe reſentment at her ſon's behaviour made her the more readily melt at the diſtreſs of her lover. 'Hold, 'Sir! what are you going to do? Will you deſert me in 'this danger and diſtreſs?' And then ſoftening her voice and looks into the greateſt tenderneſs, 'I thought,' continued ſhe, 'I ſhould never want a protector while 'my friend lived.'—'Nor ſhall you, madam,' anſwered he with an appearance of warmth that baniſhed all reſerve. 'My life ſhall protect you from every danger and af-'front. But,—oh, that I had a tie to juſtify ſuch an 'attachment to the world, which elſe will cenſure it ſe-'verely.' And then, taking her hand, he bent his knee, and preſſed it to his lips.

Such an act of gallantry was not to be reſiſted, in the condition ſhe was then in. She bent forward to meet him, and laying her head upon his boſom as he aroſe,—'Let it be juſtified,' ſhe murmured in a broken faultering accent, 'by every ſacred tie of love and truth; of 'honour and religion!'—This was all he wanted. He ſeized her in his arms, and preſſing her to his breaſt, ſealed the contract on her trembling, withered lips.

The impatient love-ſick fair, now thought every obſtacle to her wiſhes removed, and therefore diſtantly propoſed ſending for a prieſt directly, to tie the ſacred knot, and prevent any deſigns her undutiful ſon might form to diſappoint her happineſs. But her prudent lover was in no ſuch haſte! He now had her ſecure, beyond danger

of

of retreating; but as her perſon was not the only object of his deſires, he wiſely judged it beſt to refrain, a few moments, from the poſſeſſion of that, to ſecure the more ſolid enjoyment of her fortune; as he was not certain, but this fit of fondneſs might wear off, and her natural affection for her ſon return, when her untimely paſſion ſhould be gratified. He, therefore, reſolved to improve her preſent diſpoſition beyond the danger of repentance, and ſent for the prieſt directly, paſſing the intermediate moments till his arrival, in the moſt paſſionate, endearing dalliance.

But, juſt as the bluſhing, baſhful bride was going to approach the altar, he ſtopped ſhort, as if upon a ſudden thought, and turning to her, 'This, madam, ſecures 'our preſent happineſs,' ſaid he, 'but how are you to 'be revenged upon your baſe, ungrateful ſon? What 'certainty have I, that a return of your former fondneſs 'for him may not ſacrifice me to his implacable reſent-'ment? Some ſettlement ſhould firſt be made; and 'then anxiety and fear won't damp the ardour of our 'joys.'—'I underſtand you not!' anſwered ſhe in confuſion and aſtoniſhment. 'What ſettlement can you 'mean? Do I not give you the poſſeſſion of my fortune 'with myſelf?'—'True, madam,' replied he, 'you 'do! And could I be ſure of having them for ever, I 'ſhould be ſatisfied! But death may rob me of you, 'and then your fortune will deſcend to your ugracious 'ſon, while I am thrown upon the world, deſtitute of 'every means of ſelf-defence and ſupport.'—'And can 'you doubt my love?' added ſhe, not a little ſurpriſed, and ſtartled at his caution.—'I doubt it not! nor 'would I doubt it!' returned he, 'and therefore will 'remove all room for doubt.'—'What muſt I ſettle 'then?' ſaid ſhe. 'How much of my fortune will re-'move your fears, and ſatisfy your wiſhes? Here! take 'this paper, and write down your terms!'—'That is 'ſoon done!' ſaid he, and taking the paper, directly wrote the word, ALL, and reached it to her. It is not eaſy to deſcribe her aſtoniſhment and indignation, at the

aſſurance

assurance and unreasonableness of such a demand.—'What! ALL!' said she, with evident emotion, 'will 'no less do? Is nothing to be left to my disposal? 'This is too hard?' The lover instantly perceived his ticklish situation! However, he was resolved to try the utmost, assured, that even if her resolution held, he was in no danger of losing her quite. 'Madam,' said he, throwing his arms around her, and embracing her tenderly, 'I give you myself, and all I have; and I ex-'pect the like return: I pretend not to compare the va-'lue of the gifts; but love is delicate, and will bear no 'abatement.'

If the passions of youth are impetuous, those of old age are silly! The ardour of this address, with shame of being refused upon any account, thus in the very crisis of her hopes, made her comply, and she betrayed the confidence of her husband, and signed away the inheritance of her child, to gratify a preposterous, untimely, ridiculous love.

The return she met with was just! Her new husband, now all his schemes were accomplished, scorned to preserve even the decency of appearance, but threw off the mask directly, and treated her with such indignity and contempt, that she broke from him in despair, in the first week of her marriage, and threw herself upon the mercy of her basely ruined son; whose resentment was not proof to such a trial, but, yielding to filial piety, he shared, with her, the poor pittance which he happily had independent of her, till she sunk under the weight of misfortune, shame and remorse.

Nor did her husband treat his first benefactor, or his parents, better. With the former he directly dropped all correspondence; and, giving the latter an allowance of twenty pounds a year, just to keep them from starving, he positively forbid their ever letting him hear from them more, on the penalty of forfeiting that, and every other instance of his favour.

Far from being satisfied with the success of his villany, or enjoying the fortune he had so basely obtained, his

whole

whole life has been ſpent, as you ſee, in anxious attempts to hide the meanneſs of his original, under the ſplendor of his appearance; and the iniquity by which he acquired his wealth, by vain oſtentation of charity and munificence.

CHAP. XXXV.

Continued: Some reflections that may appear impertinent to many, and unprofitable to more, but ſtill are neither improper nor unjuſt. The hiſtory of an honeſt attorney. More wonders! The way of the world reverſed: Right triumphant over might; and gratitude ſhewn in high life.

MOVE your eyes towards the lower end of the table, and behold that perſon whoſe aſpect and appearance command veneration and eſteem. He was bred in a profeſſion, the very name of which is become a reproach, from the abuſe of unworthy profeſſors. Nor can it be otherwiſe, while every low-bred perſon, who is juſt able to give a ſon the firſt rudiments of education, and ambitious of ſeeing him in the character of a gentleman, is admitted to breed him an attorney; and as ſoon as he has ſerved a time, as to the moſt illiberal mechanic trade, to turn him looſe upon the world, to live by the practice of the very crimes and iniquities which his profeſſion was originally inſtituted to ſuppreſs, without any fortune to ſave him from the neceſſity of having recourſe to ſuch baſe means; and without being inſtructed in the principles of probity and virtue, to ſupport him againſt the temptations of the many frauds and villanies which his buſineſs brings him to the knowledge of: Nay, ſo far from giving any attention to this indiſpenſible duty, of forming the mind by proper inſtruction, ſuch is the perverſeneſs of man, that if a child betrays an early propenſity to chicane and fraud, by ſetting his play fellows together by the ears, and cozening them of their toys, he is immediately marked for this profeſſion, and, inſtead of being corrected for ſuch a diſpoſition, and having it nipped in the bud, is encouraged in it, by hearing it made the omen and ground of his future ſucceſs in life, till it is confirmed beyond the ſenſe of ſhame and

remorſe, and becomes the ruling principle of his life. The conduct, conſequent to ſuch education and principles, has brought the profeſſion into ſo great diſrepute, that ſcarce any perſon of character or fortune will breed a ſon to it; by which means the evil is daily aggravated more and more, and threatens to become abſolutely irremediable at laſt. For, at preſent, ſo many are the opportunities that tempt to iniquity in the practice, and ſo univerſal the reproach affixed to the very name of an attorney, that all regard to reputation, that powerful preſervative of virtue, ſeems to be in vain, and it requires an uncommon rectitude of heart to ſupport the conflict: but that there are ſome who are equal to this trial, and that the fault is not in the profeſſion, but in the abuſe of it, the perſon before us is an eminent inſtance.

A nobleman, who died ſome time ſince without legitimate iſſue, thought proper to bequeath, not only his own great acquiſitions, but alſo the immenſe poſſeſſions of his anceſtors, to a ſpurious ſon, without ever conſidering whether there might not poſſibly remain ſome diſtant branches of his family, capable of inheriting what they muſt have a juſt and legal title to, though the direct line of it failed in himſelf: accordingly the heir took poſſeſſion of his adventitious fortune, and, as wealth hides every defect, entered into alliance, and made connexions with perſons of the moſt exalted rank, whoſe friendſhip and intereſt, ſupported by the immenſe riches he poſſeſſed, ſeemed to hold every inquiry into the juſtice of his title to them, in defiance.

But a generous heart is not eaſily terrified in a juſt cauſe: the perſon before us, by his knowledge in his profeſſion, and the uprightneſs of his practice, had acquired a fortune, and eſtabliſhed a character, that placed him above the reach of ſlander, and the frown of power. He had been born under the patronage of this nobleman's houſe, and in the courſe of his buſineſs, had happened to get ſome inſight into the ſettlements of his family, by which he found, that it was not in his power to alienate the acquiſitions of his illuſtrious anceſtors, and give them

to a ſtranger to their blood, while any of their deſcendants were in being. Such an act of injuſtice, therefore, raiſed the indignation and pity of his honeſt, generous heart, and he reſolved to ſet it aſide, notwithſtanding the trouble and expence that muſt neceſſarily attend ſuch an attempt.

The greateſt diſcouragement to his undertaking, was the difficulty of finding out, and aſcertaining the real heir, for the family was apparently extinct. But upon examining into the many alliances it had formerly made, which his known attachment gave him an eaſy opportunity of doing, he found, that ſome generations before, a daughter had been married to a nobleman of a neighbouring dependent kingdom; the iſſue of which marriage, if any remained, was the true, and only repreſentative of this noble houſe.

Having made this diſcovery, he went directly over to that kingdom, where, after a long and painful ſearch, he had the mortification to find, that the family was reduced, by the revolutions of government, and the calamity of the times, to two poor, low-bred illiterate women, who had been married to mechanics of the meaneſt rank, and, being left widows, and without children, now ſtrove to procure a wretched ſubſiſtence, by joining their poor ſtocks to keep a chandler's ſhop, in a city, in the remoteſt part of the kingdom.

So melancholy an inſtance of the inſtability of human grandeur, only raiſed his compaſſion, and confirmed his reſolution to vindicate the blood of the illuſtrious patrons of his family, from ſuch injuſtice and diſgrace. Accordingly he inſtantly relieved their immediate diſtreſſes, and, taking all the proper methods for aſcertaining their deſcent, brought them over to this kingdom, lodged them in his own houſe, and treated them with the reſpect due to their noble blood and better hopes.

As ſoon as every thing was prepared for the great attempt, he regularly demanded a reſtitution of their right from the unjuſt poſſeſſor, and, upon his expected refuſal, inſtituted a ſuit at law for the recovery of it, in the pro-

ſecution of which, neither difficulties nor dangers, neither threats nor promiſes, could ſlacken his ardour, till he had obtained the juſtice he demanded for them. A detail of the proceedings, in ſuch an affair, muſt be diſtreſſing to any humane heart, It is ſufficient to ſay, that every method which the art of man could invent to impoſe upon judgment, and defeat juſtice, was exerted againſt him, for ſeveral years, in hopes of exhauſting his fortune, and wearing out the lives of his injured clients, (the elder of whom actually did die during the ſuit) and ſo diſappointing his hopes. But juſtice at length prevailed, and he recovered, for them, the inheritance of their anceſtors, leaving their antagoniſt only the immediate acquiſitions of his reputed father, which, large as they are, he eagerly labours to increaſe, by every artifice of ſordid avarice.

As for the heireſs, the exalted gratitude ſhe ſhewed, proved her noble blood. As ſoon as ſhe had executed all the forms of law neceſſary to give her an abſolute power over her fortune, and juſtly paid the expence, and rewarded the trouble of recovering it, as every branch of her family was extinct, ſhe thought it but juſtice to ſettle her great fortune upon the generous recoverer of it. Nor was ſhe content with leaving it to him, when ſhe could no longer make uſe of it herſelf, but obliging him to quit the buſineſs of his profeſſion, ſhe gave the greater part of it into his immediate poſſeſſion, and, retiring to one of the principal ſeats upon her eſtate, ſpent the remainder of her life in happineſs and eſteem: the goodneſs of her heart, and the true nobleneſs of her ſoul, drowning her want of early education in the ſuperior radiance of innate virtue.

The abſolute poſſeſſion of her entire fortune, which her death gave him much ſooner than he wiſhed, has made no alteration in the conduct of this worthy perſon, who invariably purſues the dictates of juſtice and benevolence in all his actions, making his wealth a bleſſing to all, whoſe wants and virtues mark them as objects worthy of his regard and aſſiſtance. CHAP.

CHAP. XXVI.

Continued: The happy fruits of unequal marriages. A short way to pay long debts. The pleasures of polite life. A bold stroke of female genius triumphant over law and religion: an unlucky mistake brings an improper visitor into too genteel company.

IMMEDIATELY below him, you see one of those instances of inconsistency which diversify the motly character of man. In the deep sunk lines of his face you may read learning and intense thought, as the placid serenity of his eye shews an heart warmed with piety and moral virtue; what pity, that a listless indolence of mind throws a shade over so bright a character, and submission to the capricious yoke of female tyranny, make him passively guilty of the very follies and vices most immediately opposite to his own virtue and good sense!

The pious care of a good father had so improved the eminent abilities with which nature had blessed this gentleman, by the most judicious education, that the promise of his youth gave hopes of his being an ornament and advantage to his age and country; but one indiscreet action overcast this pleasing prospect; and in its consequences, has brought him to be the insignificant thing you see.

This was a marriage of meer inclination, with a person, who had neither fortune, beauty, nor merit, to justify his choice; and who yet has taken the unjustifiable advantage of this indolence of his temper, to usurp as absolute an authority over him, as if she possessed them all, in the most eminent degree, and conferred upon him the benefit and obligation she herself received.

This makes his life one scene of the most irreconcileable inconsistency, between the wisdom and virtue of the very few actions, in which he is admitted to follow the dictates of his own judgment, and the follies and vices, into which she wantonly leads him every moment of his life. When I say vices, I mean those of dissipation, luxury, and extravagance, which, though the most injurious,

rious to ſociety, and productive of the worſt conſequences to particulars, are yet too often looked upon in another light, and thought harmleſs at leaſt, if not even commendable exertions of greatneſs, and generoſity of ſpirit, and the proper uſe of affluence of fortune; for, not content with the rational enjoyment of the fortune to which he raiſed her, in her proper ſphere, ſhe has aſſumed the abſolute diſpoſal of the whole, which ſhe diſſipates in every kind of faſhionable folly and profuſion, ſo as utterly to diſable him from exerting the natural generoſity and benevolence of his heart, in the extent and manner ſuited to his apparent wealth, and too often from diſcharging the moral obligations of honeſty, in the payment of his juſt and neceſſary debts.

Such an ungrateful abuſe of obligation and influence may appear ſtrange to you, who have been ſo little converſant in the ways of man; but to a more extended view of life, conſtant obſervation ſhews, that conferring a great benefit actually extinguiſhes gratitude, inſtead of raiſing it higher, and that the meaner the hands into which power is entruſted, the more exorbitant and tyrannical the uſe they make of it. Whether this ariſes from a conſciouſneſs of inability to pay ſo great a debt, and a conſequent deſire to cancel it, by an abſolute breach, that may, at the ſame time, alſo ſupport the debtor's pride, and ſeem to hide the obligation, by an implied diſavowal in the former caſe, and from a deſire of returning the tyranny felt before, in the latter, would be a curious, and not unprofitable diſquiſition, but ſhall be reſerved to another place, where the occaſion will illuſtrate it more forcibly; and only the juſtice of the obſervation, as to the preſent caſe in particular, proved by a few, out of innumerable inſtances of the ſame kind.

Of all the methods of diſſipating wealth, and precipitating ruin, the moſt ſpeedy and effectual is gaming. The preſent prevalence of the paſſion for this vice (for to call it by any other name would be a falſe tenderneſs) among all ranks and ſexes, has been already often obſerved, as it is the characteriſtic of the times. However,

ver, to ſoften the horror, with which the barefaced practice of it, by the fairer ſex, muſt ſtrike every rational mind, it is blended with matters of mere amuſement, and repreſented only as an innocent method of relieving converſation, when a number of perſons meet in public company, which muſt otherwiſe languiſh and grow tireſome, or elſe fall upon improper ſubjects. This ingenious expedient has given riſe to thoſe meetings at the houſes of the greateſt faſhion, which, from the noiſe, buſtle, and confuſion, inſeparable from ſuch crowds, are emphatically called *Routs*. In theſe, the miſtreſs of the houſe always preſides, and, conſequently attendance at them is looked upon as a compliment peculiar to her, and in which her huſband has no ſhare. For this reaſon, the greater the crowd collected, the more important the entertainer appears, and therefore no pains or expence is ſpared in inducing them to attend.

From the character already given of the wife of this gentleman, it may be concluded that ſhe exerted all her efforts, to make a figure by the frequency and greatneſs of her own routs, and by the profuſion with which ſhe gamed away her money at thoſe of others. However, the mode was become ſo univerſal, and ſo eagerly purſued, that ſhe ſoon found it was impoſſible for her to diſtinguiſh herſelf in the manner ſhe deſired, if ſhe could not ſtrike out ſome new way; but in this ſhe was not long at a loſs, the boldneſs of her genius prompted her to try an expedient, which no one before her had dared to venture upon.

This was to fix her routs upon the day ſet apart, by laws, human and divine, for the duties of religion, and which till then had been held ſacred to theſe alone, from every kind of buſineſs and recreation. So bold a ſtroke neceſſarily attracted the notice of the public, and the remiſſneſs of the legiſlature overlooking it, the crowds who, from an *inſenſibility* to thoſe duties, were utterly at a loſs how to get rid of ſo much time, gladly embraced ſuch an opportunity, and flocked to her in numbers, that amply ſatisfied her ambition. Such ſucceſs and impu-

nity

nity ſoon made her example imitated; but, as ſhe had led the way, the merit of that ſecured her from being ſupplanted by any rival, and having her company decoyed from her.

The circumſtances of her huſband's birth, and the principles in which he had been educated, made him at firſt look upon ſuch an inſult upon religion, with the ſtrongeſt horror: but ſhe made light of his ſcruples, and over-ruled all his objections, with ſuch an abſolute authority, that, for the ſake of peace, he was obliged to ſubmit, and join in what he dared not contradict; till he has at length forfeited the acquaintance of every ſerious, rational, and religious perſon.

He was, at firſt, greatly affected at this falling off, and much diſtreſſed to think what it could proceed from, as he was not ſenſible of any deviation, in his own ſentiments, from the principles which had made his acquaintance ſought by every man of ſenſe and virtue; but an accident ſoon opened his eyes to the abſurdity of his ſituation.

The acquaintance, upon which he juſtly ſet the greateſt value, was with a prelate of diſtinguiſhed merit and virtue, an intimate friend of his deceaſed father. With him he ſpent the happieſt hours of his life; and, in the wiſdom and piety of his converſation, found relief for the ſick heart, from the follies and riotous exceſſes which he was a ſlave to at home. Though he always met with the moſt benevolent and friendly reception from this worthy perſon, yet the coolneſs with which he found himſelf treated by ſome others, made his apprehenſion ſo ready to take alarm, that, upon his grace's not returning a viſit or two, with the exacteſt punctuality, either from ſickneſs, or ſome neceſſary engagement, he could not help expreſſing his uneaſineſs, with ſuch warmth, when he went to ſee him next, that his grace, who, though he deſpiſed ceremony, would not give pain or offence to any perſon, eſpecially one for whom he had ſo ſincere an eſteem, accounted for his late omiſſion, by giving the real reaſon of it, and told him that he would do himſelf the

pleaſure

pleaſure of viſiting him any day, when he might be ſure of finding him at home.

The gentleman anſwered, that, if his grace would appoint any day agreeable and convenient to him, he ſhould gladly break through all engagements, and attend to receive him. This was a ſtrain of complaiſance which the prelate would not agree to, but inſiſted upon knowing what day he was uſually at home, when he would call upon him, in a friendly manner, without putting him to the trouble of waiting for him in particular.

The affectionate, ſincere manner in which this was ſaid, was ſo pleaſing to the gentleman, that it put him entirely off his guard, and he anſwered eagerly, and without ever conſidering that the next day was Sunday, when he was always at home. This was ſtrictly true; he was always at home on that day, becauſe it was his lady's day for ſeeing company, if he had in the leaſt reflected on which, he would never have appointed his grace to come, as he was ſenſible that he ſhould for ever forfeit his acquaintance by it.

Though that was a day which the prelate dedicated to employments of a very different nature from paying complimentary viſits, there was ſomething in the earneſtneſs of the manner in which the gentleman appointed it, that made him apprehend he had ſome ſecret uneaſineſs upon his mind, which he wanted to communicate, for aſſiſtance or advice; wherefore he complied without heſitation, nor did the other recollect the impropriety of what he had done, till it was too late to be remedied. For his grace going the next evening, as he had promiſed, was not a little ſurpriſed to find a crowd of coaches before the door, for he had never heard of, nor ſuſpected, the ſcene that was acting; but, however, being informed that his friend was at home, he thought it beſt to proceed, and ſo lighting from his chariot, was ſhewn up, into a room, where there was a mixed multitude ſeriouſly engaged at cards!

The very mention of ſuch a ſcene would have ſtruck him with horror, judge then what his ſentiments muſt

be

be at the ſight; and particularly to be betrayed to it, as he imagined, on purpoſe to inſult him, by a man whom he eſteemed, and whoſe father he had ſincerely loved.

As ſoon as he had recovered himſelf from his aſtoniſhment, he directly turned about, and departed, juſt as he was perceived by the maſter of the houſe, whoſe confuſion at his own indiſcretion, in appointing ſuch a time, which he inſtantly recollected, is not to be deſcribed.—He ſtarted from his chair, and exclaiming, 'Good God! 'what have I done?'—would have followed him directly, if his lady, with whom he was playing, and who was juſt then dealing, had not ſtopped him, and inſiſted on knowing what was the matter.

'Good God! madam,' ſaid he, in the utmoſt confuſion and diſtreſs, 'did not you ſee his grace come to 'the door this moment? I went to pay him a viſit yeſ-'terday, and unfortunately engaged him to return it 'this evening, without ever conſidering that it was *your* '*night*.'—'And is that all,' anſwered ſhe, who had gone on with her deal, and juſt turned up an ace, 'then 'pray ſit ſtill, and play your cards; you ſee clubs are 'trumps! His grace may come at a proper time if he 'pleaſes.'

Great as the huſband's diſtreſs was, the accent with which theſe words were ſpoken, nailed him to the chair; ſo that he was forced to let his grace go home, and remain that night in an opinion ſo painful and injurious to him. But he laid not his head at reſt, till he had written his grace a letter of apology for his miſtake, which he candidly acknowledged, and conjured him to forgive, in the moſt earneſt manner.

The imaginary inſult, of being trapanned into ſuch a ſcene, had at firſt provoked his grace beyond the uſual evenneſs of his temper; but he had had time to cool before he received the letter (for he never lay down in anger, nor aroſe but in charity with all mankind) and, reading it diſpaſſionately, was ſo moved at the ſituation into which he found his friend fallen, that all thoughts of perſonal reſentment vaniſhed, and he anſwered it with

the

the greateſt humanity and tenderneſs, drawing the folly and danger of ſuch a complaiſance in its proper ſtrength, and urging his return to the practice of his own principles, with every argument of reaſon, virtue, and religion, promiſing to renew his acquaintance with the ſame, or greater intimacy than before, as ſoon as he ſhould deſiſt from ſuch an impious profanation and abuſe of a day made ſacred to piety and devotion, by every civil and religious law: till he ſhould do which, it was inconſiſtent with his character and principles to keep up any further intercourſe with a perſon in ſuch circumſtances.

The juſtice of this reaſoning was acknowledged by the perſon to whom it was addreſſed, and the loſs, which followed the neglect of it, ſeverely felt, but he wanted reſolution to reſume the authority that was neceſſary for putting it in execution, and ſo tamely ſubmits, againſt his better judgment, to all the impoſitions of a tyranny, which was firſt erected upon his folly, and ſtill ſubſiſts by his indolence.

CHAP. XXXVII.

Continued: Confuſion worſe confounded, rout on rout: the tranformation of a conſtable into a devil introduces a ſtory of the devil's dancing in maſquerade, and frightens a polite aſſembly into a fit of devotion, which laſts a whole night with moſt of them. A glimpſe of the courage of a modern man of honour.

BUT, though ſuch meetings as theſe are held in apparent defiance of the laws, you muſt not imagine, that thoſe who go to them are inſenſible of the impropriety, or unapprehenſive of the danger of ſuch a conduct. By danger, I mean the immediate one, from the ſecular power, for that of the divine wrath they never gave themſelves the trouble of thinking about.

Of this a remarkable inſtance happened at this place, not very long after the affair of his grace. A gentleman of humour, as well as reaſon, who was intimate in this gentleman's family, and had often ſtrove in vain to convince his lady of the diſagreeable conſequences that might attend ſuch an avowed diſregard to decency at leaſt, reſolved

ſolved to take another method, and try what effect ridicule and ſhame might have, where every argument from reaſon had failed.

Accordingly, one night, in the midſt of the riot, he contrived to have it whiſpered in the company, that a neighbouring *conſtable*, remarkable for puniſhing every offence, for which he did not receive a proper compoſition, intended to come with the church-wardens, and all the pariſh officers at his heels, and interrupt their diverſion; and dreſſing himſelf exactly like the conſtable, whom he nearly reſembled in ſize and figure, and buckling on a wooden leg, like him he ſtalks among them, juſt as the ſervant announced his coming, by the name of the conſtable, whom he perſonated.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the aſtoniſhment and confuſion of the whole company at ſuch an attack! Though there were ſeveral preſent, whoſe rank placed them above his authority, ſurpriſe and conſciouſneſs of their guilt ſo far deprived them of all reſolution and preſence of mind, that they joined in the juſt fear of the reſt, and attempted to make an ignominious eſcape with them. The candles were all inſtantly put out, the windows were broke open, and ſtars and ribbons were ſeen among the crowd that leaped into the court, and ran through the ſtreets, without regarding dirt or cold, while the more timorous ſex ſtood petrified with fear, uncertain which to face, ſhame or danger.

In the mean time, the pretended conſtable took the advantage to ſlip off his wooden leg, tye-wig, and long cloak, juſt as the ſervants had taken the alarm, and come in to ſee what was the matter, and ſo had an opportunity of enjoying the whole ſcene, without danger of being ſuſpected for the author of it.

The firſt queſtion which the lady of the houſe, whoſe active ſpirit firſt recovered itſelf, aſked, was, What was become of the conſtable, and who let him in? At the mention of a conſtable, the ſervants all ſtarted, as not one of them knew any thing of him; and the very ſervant, who had announced his entrance, declared he had never

heard

heard a word of him, for, as he had not told his office, not one of them had the leaſt notion of ſuch a perſon's preſuming to come among them. But upon telling his name, and deſcribing his appearance, their ſurpriſe was changed the other way; they all remembered his entrance, but every one of them poſitively inſiſted that he had not gone back; ſo that the queſtion now was, What could have poſſibly become of him? as his leaping out of the window, as the others had gallantly done, was neither neceſſary, nor indeed poſſible for him to do, maimed as he was.

While they were forming ſagacious conjectures on ſo ſtrange and unaccountable an affair, the metamorphoſed conſtable, who had joined in the converſation, ſaid to an old lady, who ſeemed more ſtrongly affected than any other of the company, that the oddneſs of this affair put him in mind of one, not very unlike it in many circumſtances, which he had read, in accounts of good authority, to have happened in France, during the minority of Lewis XIV.

This raiſed the curioſity of all who heard him, who immediately crowded round him, and deſired him to tell it. At firſt he ſeemed rather unwilling, and very gravely prefaced his ſtory with declaring, that for his part he believed nothing of the matter, though he owned it was related by writers of undoubted veracity, and atteſted in a manner almoſt beyond any fact he had ever read in hiſtory. Having thus prepared them, for ſomething extraordinary, he proceeded thus: 'You know, Madam,' addreſſing himſelf to the old lady, to whom he had firſt mentioned it, and who he knew plumed herſelf not a little upon her knowledge in *ſecret* hiſtory, every thing that bore the name of which, ſhe had read, and implicitly believed every word of; 'that, in the minority of 'Lewis the Great, Mazarine, who governed the king-'dom, took every method of diverting the attention of 'the young monarch from ſtate affairs, by all kinds of 'pleaſurable entertainment, that could be deviſed.'— 'True, Sir,' anſwered the old lady, who could not

reſtrain her deſire of ſhewing her knowledge. 'And 'that is ſaid to have influenced the conduct of his future 'life, in that expenſive pomp and vain magnificence, 'which attracted the admiration of foreigners, while it 'exhauſted and ruined his ſubjects. Hem! hem! but 'I beg pardon, Sir! pray don't let me interrupt you.'

'As this Mazarine was an Italian, you know, Ma-'dam,' continued he, to which ſhe aſſented with a nod, as ſhe conſtantly did, 'it was natural for him to have a 'fondneſs for the entertainments of his own country, he 'therefore introduced the Italian opera into France.— 'The firſt time it was preſented, one of the principal 'parts of the entertainment conſiſted of a comic dance, 'that was performed by ſix of the nimbleſt caperers in 'all Italy. At firſt they went on expertly, and with 'great applauſe; but immediately found themſelves at a 'loſs, and were unable to proceed any farther, being 'put out by the intruſion of a ſtrange dancer, who came 'among them no body could tell how, and diſconcerted 'the entire ſcheme of their dance, which had been calcu-'lated only for their own number. This at length threw 'them into ſuch confuſion, that they were obliged to 'ſtand ſtill! when the manager of the entertainment 'coming to them, to ſee what was the matter, perceived 'the cauſe of their confuſion, and obliged them all to 'unmaſk, (for they were dreſſed exactly alike and wore 'maſks) that he might detect and ſeize the impertinent 'intruder, when, to his, and to the utter aſtoniſhment 'of every one preſent, he vaniſhed as unaccountably as 'he had come, though the eyes of the whole houſe were 'upon him, and there appeared to be no more than the 'original number, and the ſame perſons, who began 'the dance. I believe, Madam, you may recollect the 'other circumſtances of the ſtory, which I do not chuſe 'to mention, on this occaſion; they are told in the *ſe-'cret memoirs* of cardinal Mazarine.'—'I do, Sir,' returned ſhe, with great emotion, 'remember ſomething 'of it. But really'—'Dear Madam,' interrupted another, whoſe curioſity was raiſed too high to bear a mo-

ment's

ment's delay, 'pray let the gentleman proceed! When he 'has ended, if he omits any thing, you may then inform 'us farther. Pray, Sir, do proceed.'

'Why, really, Madam,' continued he, under ſome apparent confuſion, 'I am at a loſs how to act, and had 'much rather be excuſed; however, I muſt beg leave to 'obſerve, that for my own part, I do not believe a ſin-'gle ſyllable of the ſtories of ghoſts, and apparitions, 'and devils, and ſuch like ſtuff, that ever were told, 'though this ſtory, in particular, is told in a manner, 'and confirmed with circumſtances, not eaſily to be con-'tradicted.'

This ſolemn preface raiſed the curioſity of them all to a torture, and alarmed apprehenſions, that would not admit of a moment's ſuſpenſe. 'Dear Sir, pray pro-'ceed,' echoed from an hundred mouths at once, as they preſſed cloſer to him. The gentleman bowed and conti-nued: 'The whole company was now thrown into a 'confuſion, as great as that of the dancers: they had 'all reckoned a ſeventh perſon, and the connoiſſeurs, in 'particular, had obſerved that one of them had ſhewn 'greater agility, and *cut* higher, than any one they had 'ever ſeen before, and indeed than they thought it poſ-'ſible for any human perſon to do. This hint alarmed 'the whole houſe, and it was immediately concluded 'that the devil had maliciouſly joined in the dance, on 'purpoſe to ſpoil their ſport; an opinion, which one or 'two unlucky circumſtances ſeemed to give weight to, 'which were, that all the dancers had been dreſſed like 'devils, the opera being *The Fall of Man*, and the dance 'exhibited, as a triumph of the devils upon the occaſion, 'that it was acted on a *Sunday evening*. Trifling as 'theſe circumſtances really were, they threw the whole 'audience into a conſternation; ſome directly fancied 'the candles burnt blue, others that the place ſmelt 'ſtrongly of ſulphur; and one more impudently fooliſh 'than all the reſt, inſiſted that he had obſerved the *cloven* 'foot; but, what was moſt ſurpriſing of all, the 'cardinal, who could not be ſuſpected of ſuperſtition,

'was so affected by it, that he ordered the house to be 'dismissed directly, and that opera never to be performed 'again, nor any other on a *Sunday*, which was observed 'during his life, and for some time after.'

It is impossible for words to describe the situation of the company, at the conclusion of this story. At the mention of the candles burning blue, all turned their eyes about, and fancied the same; as to their smelling sulphur, it was more than imagination, the pretended constable having taken an opportunity, while they were all in confusion, to throw, unperceived, a composition which he had brought with him on purpose, into the fire, which had filled the room with a most sulphureous smell, and more than one of the company declared, *they thought* they saw a cloven foot, or something very like it, fly out of the window.

The scene was now changed to an appearance really frightful. Every lengthened visage was as pale as death, every haggard eye staring in wild affright. The old lady to whom the tale had been particularly addressed, confirmed every syllable of it, and added many circumstances from secret histories, of her own immediate invention: and every one present had some similar story to tell in support of it, till they at length terrified one another to that degree, that they were afraid to look around, or even raise their voices to bid their servants prepare for their departure.

The gentleman, pleased at the success of his artifice, resolved to improve it to the utmost, and take advantage of their present situation, to work them up to some action, that should make them ashamed, at least, ever to be guilty of the like profanation of that sacred day again: 'Defend us, heaven!' exclaimed he, fixing his eyes with horror, on one of the windows. 'What can that be?' This completed the terror: they all believed the devil was returning to destroy them, for the boldest of them all had not the spirit to turn her eyes, to see what he looked at, and joined most devoutly in his ejaculation to heaven for defence.

He

He ſaw this was the proper moment for what he intended, and ſo dropping ſuddenly upon his knees, in which they all followed his example, he repeated aloud the confeſſion in the ſervice of the church, adding, with particular emphaſis, to the ſins of commiſſion, this of breaking the ſabbath, and to thoſe of omiſſion, the neglect of the duties of religion, to which it was devoted; and concluded with a ſolemn vow, never to be guilty of either again, if heaven would remit its wrath and ſpare them for the preſent.

All the while he had been performing this ceremony, he had kept his eyes fixed upon the window, and at the end of it, exclaimed in a rapture, 'Our vows are heard! 'it vaniſhes! the danger's over!'—Upon which he aroſe, as did they all, and fell into the moſt ſerious and devout converſation, upon ſo ſignal an inſtance of divine favour and mercy, while their coaches and chairs were getting ready to carry them home, when they retired with thoughts very different from thoſe which they uſually brought from ſuch places.

Though every lady in the company had been frightened into a fit of devotion, by what had happened, none ſuffered ſo ſeverely by it as the lady of the houſe, who notwithſtanding the public contempt ſhe ſhewed for religion, was ſo fearful of ghoſts and hobgoblins, that after having perſuaded her huſband to lay out a large ſum of money, (much more than prudence would have permitted) in repairing and fitting up, in the modern taſte, a beautiful antique caſtle that was upon his eſtate, upon hearing that a particular apartment in it was haunted by a ſpirit, quitted it directly, and never could be prevailed upon to ſleep a ſecond night in it. As ſoon therefore as the company was all gone, and ſhe left to her own meditations, her fears recurred ſo faſt upon her, that ſhe fell into fits, which ſeemed to threaten her with the total loſs of her reaſon, raving of devils and damnation, and railing againſt cards, and ſabbath breaking, with all the vehemence of a modern enthuſiaſt, among his mad brethren in Moorfields. But this did not laſt long! the

gentleman, to avoid detection, had been obliged to leave his tye-wig, cloak, and wooden leg behind him. These, which were found upon clearing out the apartments, unravelled the whole myſtery of the affair, and ſhewed that it had been all a trick; nor was the lady long at a loſs for the author of it; (for the firſt mention of the diſcovery had put an end to her fits of fear and devotion) the pains he had often taken to perſuade her againſt theſe meetings, on this particular day, and the zeal he ſhewed in the late affair, convinced her it was all tranſacted by him. This threw her into the moſt violent rage againſt him; but as it was impoſſible to prove, and he denied the fact when charged with it, ſhe could have no other ſatisfaction of him, than that of diſappointing his deſign, by returning to her former practice with double eagerneſs, and aggravating the ſcandal of it by every act of irreligion and profaneneſs, that ſhe could deviſe, in which hopeful courſe ſhe ſtill perſiſts.

As for the male part of the company, who had ſo manfully leaped out of the windows, and made their eſcape through the cold and dirt of the night; ſome of them caught cold, that coſt them their noſes, and one or two loſt their lives in duels, which they fought in vindication of their characters, from ſo ſcandalous an aſperſion, for it was thought proper to deny the whole ſtory.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

Continued: Maternal tenderneſs of an uncommon kind. A moſt magnificent wedding diſappointed, by an unhappy inſtance of female frailty. A new method of calculating general opinion. An unlucky accident changes a ſcene of joy into grief, and affords an uſeful caution to old age and infirmity, to guide their ſteps with proper care. A drawn battle. An inſtance of fell revenge makes room for a ſtranger, who reſtores general harmony.

NOR is ſhe content with offering this flagrant inſult to religion and law; the tendereſt feelings of nature are alſo wantonly made the objects of her groſſeſt ridicule; in the abſurdity of which, to ſhew her matrimo-

nial

nial power in its utmoſt plenitude, ſhe obliges her paſſive mate to bear his fooliſh part, and ſacrifice common ſenſe, as he had before done conſcience, to her capricious tyranny.

As ſhe has no children, upon whom ſhe can diſplay maternal care and love, ſhe affects holding the important and inexpreſſible tenderneſs and duty of theſe in the loweſt contempt: and to ſhew this in the moſt glaring colours, proſtitutes them upon ſome inſignificant animal, in all the ſolemn pomp and parade of ceremony, uſual on ſuch occaſions, to make the ridicule more ſtriking.

The preſent worthy object of her affection is an *owl*, which ſhe careſſes and treats with the endearments of a darling child; calling it the fondeſt names, talking to it for hours together, every Sunday morning, and entertaining her moſt intimate acquaintances with a particular detail of its moſt engaging qualities and ſenſible actions! Nor does her humour ſtop here, ſhe dreſſes her favourite in all the fantaſtic extravagance of the mode, makes a complimentary inquiry after its health, part of the ceremonial of her acquaintance, and celebrates the anniverſary of its birth, with the expenſive magnificence of a public entertaiment, when the dear creature is produced with all the ceremony and ſtate of a royal babe, to receive the praiſe and careſſes of the company; and, to finiſh the farce, her huſband is obliged to act his part, and join with her in receiving the congratulations paid upon the happy occaſion.

Perhaps you will imagine that ſuch an unaccountable caprice is meant to expoſe the ſervility of complaiſance, and to ſhew to what an height it is capable of being ſtrained, to gratify the humours of the rich. Such a concluſion is not unnatural, nor the general ſatire implied in it, unjuſt; but here in reſpect to her, it does not hold, for ſhe has no ſuch aim in view, nor thinks of any thing beyond the immediate gratification of her own whim; on the contrary, ſhe would be as ready to pay the ſame compliment to any of her acquaintance, if they required it: indeed the ſhare ſhe makes her huſband take in the

ceremony, bears a different conſtruction, and is plainly ſeen to be deſigned as a moſt ſevere and inſolent ridicule upon him, as it is no ſecret, that ſhe imputes her want of children to his fault: a charge, which his blind ſubmiſſion to her will, makes not improbable.

But this is not the firſt inſtance of the extravagance of her humour, nor he the only one who has been made the object of public ridicule by it: though he has never miſſed of his ſhare.

Before her preſent favourite, a cat engroſſed her fondneſs in as eminent a degree, but unhappily loſt that and her life together by a ſlip of female frailty: for ſlighting the example of her miſtreſs's chaſtity, ſhe had taken an opportunity to carry on an intrigue with a cat in the neighbourhood, whom ſhe uſed to meet in the evenings upon the leads of the houſe, while her miſtreſs was abroad, and her own attendants engaged in parties of pleaſure below ſtairs.

This unfortunately broke through all her miſtreſs's great deſigns, who was juſt then in treaty for a marriage between her and the male favourite of a lady of quality in Paris, the preliminaries of which were all ſettled, and nothing remaining but to determine where the wedding ſhould be celebrated; ſhe, for the honour of the ſex, demanded that the gallant ſhould wait upon his miſtreſs, and the other inſiſting upon the example of all royal marriages, where the bride goes to the bridegroom; a reaſon ſo juſt, that the heroine of our tale diſputed it only for form-ſake, and was preparing to ſet out for Paris, with her huſband and a grand retinue, to ſolemnize the wedding, as ſoon as the proxy, which had been propoſed to be ſent by the other party, ſhould arrive.

Upon the firſt diſcovery of it, therefore, by apparent ſymptoms of the frail one's pregnancy, the whole houſe was in an uproar, every ſervant turned off, and a council of her moſt intimate friends directly ſummoned, to conſider what was to be done in ſuch an emergency, and how the treaty of marriage could be broke off, without giving offence to the other parties, or expoſing her own

diſgrace.

disgrace. After much and mature deliberation, it was resolved to send an express immediately to Paris, to prevent the proxy's setting out, and to apologize for breaking off the marriage, on account of a pre-contract, into which madam Grimalkin had inconsiderately entered, without the knowledge of her mistress; and to make this embassy the more respected and effectual, the person thought most proper to be sent upon it, was her husband, who accordingly was obliged to set out on his journey directly, but was rescued from the ridicule of it, by a fit of the gout, which arrested him at his first stage; so that he was forced to transfer the honour of the employment to his gentleman, who acquitted himself of it with great reputation.

But this was not the only distress in which this unfortunate misbehaviour of the favourite involved her mistress. In the first transports of her rage, she had ordered her to be taken out of her presence, and publickly vowed that she would never see her more: but, when her resentment cooled a little, her former fondness returned, and she could not bear the thought of abandoning her, for a first fault, to the low life of a common cat, or depriving herself of the pleasure she enjoyed in her company. But the difficulty was how to receive her again into favour, consistently with the purity of her own character, and without seeming, in some measure, to countenance the incontinency she had been guilty of, by such lenity. While she was in this perplexity between delicacy and love, her instructor in the important science of gaming most luckily happened to pay her a morning visit, to give her a lecture, and inform her of some new discoveries he had made in his mysterious art. As she knew that he was a nice casuist, the moment he approached her toilet, she informed him of the whole affair, and desired his advice.

After taking some time to deliberate upon the case, 'Madam,' said the sage, shaking his hoary head, and extending the fore-finger of his right hand, 'this is a 'very difficult point to decide: however, I have cal-

'culated

'culated the chances on each ſide, and have found that 'the odds are as ſeven, one fourth, and two fifteenths 'to five, nearly (for it would be too great a trouble for 'you to examine the proof of it in more minute frac-'tions) in favour of your receiving the offender into 'your good graces again, which I prove thus: All the 'ladies in the world are liable to ſome failing or other; 'now as from weakneſs of conſtitution, derived from 'the goodneſs of their families, or brought on by their 'own intenſe application to the pleaſures of polite life, 'there are not above five who are guilty of this parti-'cular foible (I mean among people of faſhion, ſuch 'as you converſe with) to eight who are not, it is 'evident that there will be almoſt eight who will not 'condemn your conduct, for five who will; it being 'the general maxim, always to exclaim againſt the 'faults of which we are guilty ourſelves, to deceive the 'generality of the world, and make an appearance of 'our being innocent of them. If this reaſoning does 'not appear plain, I will draw it out at length, and 'adapt the calculations to the general rules of Whiſt, 'ſo that they may be proved by the cards, as the 'method moſt familiar, to you, to ſatisfy your own 'ſcruples, and anſwer the objections of your friends; 'for ladies cannot be too circumſpect in affairs of this 'kind, where ſo deep a ſtake is played for. The 'ſcheme will not take up much time to draw; nor be 'attended with much expence, not above twenty pieces, 'or ſome ſuch trifle; for you know I never am in the 'leaſt unreaſonable with my friends.'

This judicious ſolution was ſo agreeable to her, that ſhe ſaw the juſtice of it directly, and embraced it without a moment's delay, ordering the poor delinquent to be immediately brought to her, and, after a little gentle chiding, almoſt killing it with her careſſes. As to the ſage caſuiſt, ſhe thanked him for his deciſion, and, having received his lecture, deſired him to reduce his arguments into the form he propoſed, as ſoon as he pleaſed, as ſhe never had any objection to his demands;

and

and then dispatched cards immediately to all her acquaintances, to inform them of the reconciliation, and invite them to an entertainment which she gave upon the happy occasion.

Accordingly, they all attended, and poured out their compliments in the most polite profusion; but, in the height of their joy, an unfortunate accident happened, that changed their congratulation into condolance.

As the dear creature was handed about, to receive the caresses of the company, an elderly gentlewoman, to shew her extreme fondness for it, by keeping it as long as she could upon her bosom, would needs carry it herself to a lady of quality, who sat on the other side of the room, and desired to have it brought to her; but, striving to be more alert than her paralytic tottering would permit, she fell at her length upon the floor, and almost crushed the poor animal to death.

You may conceive what a confusion this threw the whole company into: the cat screamed, the old lady roared, and the voice of all present echoed a general exclamation: and, to heighten the distress, they all got up at once, and, rushing together to raise the falling pair, hindered each other so, that they lay struggling in no very agreeable situation, or decent posture, on the floor; for the cat enraged at the injury she had received, exerted all her strength for revenge, and fixed her claws in the face and neck of her supposed enemy, growling with the most envenomed spite, which made the innocent author of her disaster, roar, kick and sprawl, with all her might, as she was unable to disengage herself from the claws of her furious adversary, or even rise from the ground where she lay.

At length, some of the company made a shift to raise and part the combatants; when the poor gentlewoman was hurried to her chair, with her face and neck all in a stream of blood, the attention of the company being entirely taken up with the fright of the lady of the house for the danger of her favourite. The

The ſpirit and ſtrength which ſhe had ſhewn in revenge of the injury ſhe had received, was ſome conſolation to her miſtreſs, as it ſeemed to ſhew that ſhe could not have been very much hurt; but one of the company happening to mention her condition, renewed her fright, and made her reſolve inſtantly to ſend for one of the moſt eminent male practitioners of the obſtetric art, to enquire into the circumſtances of her caſe, and adminiſter any aſſiſtance that might be neceſſary upon the unhappy occaſion.

Accordingly a ſervant was inſtantly diſpatched in the miſtreſs's name, to the doctor, who attended without a moment's delay, imagining, from the urgency of the meſſage, that ſome lady of diſtinction might be taken ill in her houſe, as he knew the lady herſelf had no occaſion for him, and the footman could give him no farther information, than that ſome accident had happened in the company of which there was the uſual crowd. As ſoon as he arrived, he was ſhewn directly into the drawing-room, whither the lady, with a few ſelect friends had retired, where one of them leading him up to her, and lifting up an handkerchief, that covered the poor dear creature in her lap, opened the caſe to him, for the miſtreſs's grief was ſo great, that ſhe was not able to ſpeak.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe the rage into which this threw the doctor: he looked upon it as an inſult, not to be forgiven; and, as he could not wreak his reſentment upon ladies, by any act of violence upon their perſons, reſolved to ſhew it, by his treatment of the creature, for which they implored his aſſiſtance. Accordingly, he ſtooped very gravely, and taking it out of the miſtreſs's lap, laid it on the ground, and ſetting his heel upon its head, cruſhed it to death, before any one had time to interpoſe in its behalf; then turning to the lady, whoſe aſtoniſhment was ſo great, that ſhe had not power to ſpeak, 'There, madam!' ſaid he 'your favourite is delivered from all danger of abor-
'tion; but take care how you provoke another time

'the

'the resentment of a man, whom nobody provokes 'with impunity.'—Saying this, he turned about and marched away, leaving the whole company, and particularly the mistress of the innocent victim of his vengeance, in a condition not to be expressed: she wept, beat her breast, stamped with her feet upon the floor, and vowed the bittereſt vengeance; nor is it easy to say, how far her passion might have transported her, had not a gentleman entered the room that very moment with a young owl in his hand, which he had taken out of the nest that morning.

The sovereign remedy for a woman's grief, for the loss of any favourite, whether a cat, a sparrow, or an husband, is a new one. The sight of the owl instantly struck her: it had such a gravity and wisdom in its looks, that she resolved to make it the confidant of all her secrets, and the only counsellor from whom she would take advice that should contradict her inclinations. Accordingly, poor Grimalkin was ordered to be taken away, and the new favourite received in her place. This restored the general harmony and good humour; and the entertainment that was designed to celebrate Mrs. Pus's restoration to her mistress's bosom, served for the reception of the stranger. However, though a new favourite consoled the mistress for the loss of the former, she did not neglect to pay a proper respect to its remains: the body was carefully laid up till next morning, when an eminent undertaker was sent for, and orders given for her decent interment.

CHAP. XXXIX.

More happy fruits of female government. The history of an eminent patroness of the polite arts. Her peculiar method of shewing a distinguished taste and judgment. An extraordinary charge in a bill at an inn.

TURN your eye now to the other side, and observe that superannuated figure of foppery, at the upper end of the table, who plumes himself like a peacock upon the gaudiness of his dress, and gives his contribution with an ostentation and affected dignity that would dis-

grace a prince. He is another inſtance of the happy fruits of woman's government. With all the importance he aſſumes here, in his own houſe he is a perfect cypher, of no conſequence in himſelf, but as he adds to that of his wife.

So inſignificant a character may be thought incapable of affording either inſtruction or improvement, ſufficient to reward the trouble of diſplaying it; but then it introduces another, to which it ſerves as a ſhade to ſhew the glaring colours of it in a proper light, and illuſtrate the vanity, as the former did the vice, of female caprice and ambition.

He had the ſolid advantage of entering into life with a very affluent fortune; but inſtead of making it a means of happineſs to himſelf, and benefit to ſociety, by a rational and benevolent uſe; to gratify the moſt abſurd avarice, he gave up every enjoyment of it, by marrying an heireſs, the known vanity, imperiouſneſs, and extravagancy of whoſe temper ſo far over-balanced the greatneſs of her wealth, that no man of reaſon or ſpirit, who had any other poſſible way of earning a morſel of bread, would have linked his fate to her's.

The conſequence was juſt what he deſerved. The moment he became her huſband, ſhe aſſumed the moſt abſolute authority over him, and all he poſſeſſed, as if the words of their connexion had been inverted, and he had made the covenant of duty and obedience to her, and inſtantly ſet up for the patroneſs of merit in the fine arts and ſciences, to ſhew her ſuperiority of genius over the reſt of her ſex.

Such an ambition directly marked her out for a bubble to all the needy ſharping adventurers, who, under the pretence of ſuch merit, fly like locuſts to this fantaſtic people, from every part of the globe, in ſwarms, that literally devour the fruits of the land in ſuch a manner as to ſtarve the natives who are engaged in the ſame purſuits, and thereby diſcourage and prevent their riſing to that excellence, the want of which is objected to them. For though there may not perhaps be any natural difference

ference between the ſexes in the abilities of mind, neceſſary to form a proper judgment of any ſcience; yet the female labours under ſuch diſadvantages from a wrong education, that it is next to impoſſible for a woman to exert the faculties of reaſon in any diſtinguiſhed degree; the time when the ſeeds of knowledge ſhould be ſown being devoted to trifles or abſurdities that deſerve a worſe name, which by theſe means take ſuch poſſeſſion of the mind, as to influence the conduct of the whole life. Some rare inſtances indeed there are, of women, who break through this oppreſſion, and riſe above the prejudices of ſuch an education, to a degree of eminence equal to the foremoſt of the other ſex; but this requires ſuch uncommon ſtrength of genius, as is indulged to a very few; and was by no means the lot of this perſon: all her pretenſions to taſte and judgment being founded on her ability to reward them liberally in others. But even in this, her injudicious vanity has always marred the good effects of her generoſity and wealth; for, not being able herſelf to diſcern real merit, and diſdaining to follow the opinions of others, for fear of paſſing unnoticed among the crowd, ſhe blundered upon the moſt unlucky method of diſtinguiſhing herſelf that ever entered into an human head; for, as if her opinion was of more weight than that of all the world beſide, ſhe ſets up to contradict the voice of the public, and always patronizes thoſe whom they reject and decry.

Such a conduct, as I ſaid, naturally lays her open to the impoſitions of flattery and fraud: though ſhe profeſſes a taſte for all the finer arts, muſic is the particular object of her favour and encouragement: as ſoon as a new performer arrives, if he is in diſtreſs, as is almoſt always the caſe, he immediately waits upon this lady, to implore her patronage; this neceſſarily introduces a diſplay of his abilities, which ſhe never fails to reward munificently, and profeſs her approbation of, but cautiouſly, and in general terms only, that ſhe may retract it afterwards, ſhould the public unluckily join with her, for her opinion is always in the oppoſite ſcale to that of the reſt

of the world. But if he is diſapproved, ſhe takes him under her immediate protection; ſhe invites him conſtantly to her table, ſhe ſupplies him with money, with the moſt boundleſs profuſion, and makes parties among that crowd of company, which her wealth and turn for expenſive pleaſure conſtantly collect about her, to ſupport him againſt the favourites of the public; and to ſhew, that ſhe does this merely from a ſpirit of contradiction, ſhould the moſt eminent of theſe fall off, or be eclipſed by the ſuperior merit of a rival, ſhe inſtantly forgets the animoſities with which ſhe purſued his ſucceſs, and receives him into her protection and patronage, admiring his groſſeſt faults, and praiſing the very defects ſhe decried before; while her gentle mate is obliged to ſubmit to this diſſipation of his darling wealth, and to be the humble echo of her opinions, in all their various changes without daring to interpoſe a word in vindication of his own judgment or authority; but thinking himſelf happy in being permitted to make uſe of the pittances of his fortune, which he thus contributes to public charities, to give him the opportunity of aſſuming the momentary conſequence you ſee.

The many impoſitions which ſhe has ſuffered from thoſe rapacious ſycophants, would be ſufficient to make any perſon ſee the folly of ſuch a conduct, who had not wilfully reſolved againſt conviction. I ſhall juſt mention one inſtance, for the groſſneſs and ſingularity of it, and ſo conclude the diſagreeable repreſentation.

To ſhew her elegant taſte in this moſt pleaſing entertainment, and raiſe an opinion of her importance in the polite world, among her tenants and neighbours in the country, whither ſhe retires in the ſummer, ſhe always takes with her ſome of her favourite performers, who cannot fail to pleaſe perſons who never had an opportunity of hearing any better; and ſometimes even will condeſcend, upon very particular occaſions, as when ſhe gives public entertainments, to comply ſo far with the taſte of others, as to ſend for ſome of thoſe who are the higheſt in general repute; though her country-ſeat is al-

moſt

moſt at the extremity of the kingdom; which makes the expence of ſuch a compliment very conſiderable; for ſhe defrays all the charge of travelling, beſides giving a very genteel gratification for the trouble.

Upon an occaſion of this kind, ſome little time ſince, ſhe ſent for a muſician of note, to conduct a concert, which ſhe deſigned to give her neighbours, in the higheſt taſte. The man, finding he had nothing to pay, an unlimited credit being eſtabliſhed for him at every ſtage upon the road, travelled down in the higheſt luxury to her houſe, where his performance was alſo rewarded with a very handſome preſent. But, whether he thought it unequal to his merit and trouble, or imagining that he ſhould never be ſent for thither again, reſolved to make the moſt of the preſent opportunity: upon his return he took up money at every inn he ſtopped at on the road, upon the credit given him; and, where he lay, conſtantly prevailed upon one of the compliant females, who attended, to ſleep with him, for a conſiderable gratification, which he alſo ordered to be charged to the bill, and left for this lady to pay.

Such an inſult might be thought to merit her reſentment; but as the puniſhing of it would open ſcenes, which muſt lay her under a neceſſity of diſcontinuing her favourite practice of ſending for ſuch perſons, and expoſe her extravagance and taſte to public ridicule and cenſure, ſhe thought proper to overlook it as unnoticed, and pay the bills, without ſeeming to examine into the particulars of them; and to prevent the ſtory's receiving credit, ſhould it happen to be made known, continued to countenance the man, and even invited him into the country with her the next ſummer, when he played her many tricks of the ſame kind, finding he eſcaped ſo eaſy after this.

I have dealt ſo long upon the characters of this and the former lady, to ſave myſelf trouble upon other occaſions, as their actions afford a general repreſentation of female life.—I mean the life of thoſe females, who, looking upon themſelves as raiſed above the reſt of their

ſex, by rank or fortune, think it neceſſary to ſhew their ſuperiority, by breaking through all the rules which reaſon and religion have eſtabliſhed for their conduct.

How prevailing the force of ſuch examples, the inſtances juſt given ſufficiently ſhew. Indeed, ſuch is the implicit adoration paid to wealth, ſuch is the reigning paſſion, for joining in what is called good company, and partaking of their luxurious entertainments, that, let the rich and great propoſe any folly and vice, however groſs and abſurd, as the means of introduction to their tables and parties of pleaſure, they will be ſure of finding perſons enough to comply with their humours.—Theſe inſtances are taken from the moſt licentious caprices, and abſurd vanity of this ambition. The former admit of no excuſe; and though the latter may be leſs blameable in themſelves, and even bear a kind of reſemblance to virtue in many caſes, the ſucceſs is not much better, nor ever ſufficient to juſtify this ambition in females, to quit the ſubordinate ſphere allotted them by nature, and ſtrive to make a figure in the buſier and more extenſive province of man.

Nor is this the only uſeful inſtruction that may be drawn from a diſplay of theſe characters. It ſhews alſo the ridiculous and unhappy ſituation into which man falls when he tamely gives up the reins put into his hands by Providence, and ſubmits to the government of a woman, whom he was born to command.

CHAP. XL.

An irremidable defect in human policy. The hiſtory of a moſt eminent perſonage. A new way of paying the debts of guardianſhip. A daughter's diſobedience in refuſing to comply with more than paternal love. The hero of the tale extracts profit from charity, and aſſerts the rights of agency, in defiance of public opinion and ſhame.

TAKE notice of the perſon immediately below him, whom I have juſt given you an account of. By his large athletic make, nature ſeemed to deſign him for ſome of the moſt laborious employments in life; but his genius led him to other purſuits, and made him depend

upon

upon the ſharpneſs of his mind, rather than the ſtrength of his body, for his ſupport and advancement in the world.

The depravity of man makes many employments neceſſary in a community, for public ſafety and advantage, the execution of which is attended with ſo many circumſtances of horror in the puniſhment of unhappy delinquents, that no man, who is not deſtitute of that ſympathetic tenderneſs which is the higheſt honour of his nature, can bear to undertake them. This throws them upon perſons, ſpeculatively ſpeaking, the moſt unfit for ſuch offices; whoſe poverty obliges them to practice every iniquity of the profeſſion, into which they were firſt initiated by vice, and whoſe hearts are hardened by habit, againſt every ſentiment of virtue and honour, every finer feeling of nature. Thus the hangman, whoſe crimes firſt reduced him to take up the horrid trade, continues it from diſtreſs, and puts to death wretched offenders, for facts which he is hourly guilty of himſelf, without compaſſion or remorſe, till he is detected, and ſuffers the ſame puniſhment from another hand. But this is one of thoſe defects of human policy, which no human heart can remedy.

In an employment not very diſſimilar in its nature, though dignified by a leſs opprobious name, has this perſon diſplayed his abilities, for many years, to the aſtoniſhment of all who have been witneſſes of his exploits. There is a myſtery in ſuch ſcenes too horrid for repreſentation; I ſhall therefore paſs them over, and barely relate a few anecdotes of his private life, which will ſufficiently enable you to form a judgment of his whole character.

A man who, from one of the pooreſt employments by which a wretched life can be honeſtly ſuſtained, came unexpectedly to the poſſeſſion of a conſiderable fortune, by the death of a relation, who would have ſuffered him to periſh for want of a morſel of bread, had ſome way conceived ſuch a confidence in this perſon, that upon his own death, in a very little time after his elevation,

he

he entruſted his orphan daughter to his care, together with what he had been able to ſave for her, during his ſhort poſſeſſion of his eſtate, the inheritance of it paſſing away, for want of his having male iſſue, to another branch of the family.

During the minority of his ward, he took care to educate her according to the direction of her father, in a decent but frugal manner, as the fortune ſhe had a right to expect, was not ſufficient to place her above the neceſſity of induſtry and œconomy; but upon her coming of age, he was obliged to act another part: he had ſpent the greateſt part of her fortune in his pleaſures; for, ſtrange to think, even he had a paſſion for the pleaſures of polite life, and was admitted into the genteeleſt company, to enjoy them, without any enquiry into his character or ſtation, while he was able to bear the expence. Such a ſituation muſt have been diſtreſſing to any other man; bnt the buſineſs of his profeſſion ſoon ſuggeſted a method of diſengaging himſelf, which his extenſive principles made no objection to his putting in practice.

On the day before ſhe was to receive from him the fortune which was the whole foundation of her future hopes in life, he ſhewed no ſigns of uneaſineſs, but confidently gave her notice, that he deſigned to pay her the moment ſhe was entitled to receive it, and even appointed the other truſtees of the will to meet at his houſe, and be witneſſes to his punctual execution of his truſt. Such a conduct naturally gave ſatisfaction to every perſon concerned, and entirely removed ſome apprehenſion which they had entertained before. But they ſoon found reaſon to change their ſentiments again. For, that very evening he took an occaſion to go through a bye ſtreet, juſt after it became dark, and when he thought himſelf in no danger of being taken notice of, where he rolled himſelf in the kennel, battered his head againſt the ſtones, as if he had received ſeveral ſevere ſtrokes, and ſcattered ſome paper he had in his pocket for that purpoſe, about the ſtreets; and then, in that abaſed appearance, and with all the ſymptoms of affright and de-

ſpair

ſpair in his looks, ruń into a neighbouring coffee-houſe, where he told the company, that he had been juſt knocked down and robbed of a conſiderable ſum of money, which he was to pay the next day. Some of them inſtantly went to the place in which he ſaid this had happened, where they found his hat and wig, and the papers he had left for them, which at firſt gained credit to the ſtory; but when the general tenor of his character, and the circumſtances of his being to pay that ſum the next day, came to be conſidered, the whole artifice was ſeen through, eſpecially as he never offered to prove where he had received the money, nor gave any reaſon for his carrying ſuch a ſum about him, the very bulk and weight of which, (for he ſaid it was all in ſpecie, to prevent too particular an enquiry about bank notes) muſt have been a trouble and incumbrance to him; but barely alledged, that he had always kept the money by him in caſh, ever ſince he had received it: and if any one expreſſed the leaſt doubt of what he ſaid, or deſired to have theſe particulars better explained, he directly charged them with making inſinuations injurious to his character and credit, which he threatened to vindicate by law.

Such a menace from ſuch a man, was not ineffectual! The injured lady was abſolutely deprived of every means of doing herſelf juſtice; and, as the poor are ever friendleſs, no unconcerned perſon cared to enter into a diſpute with one of his known experience, and who was acquainted with methods of putting his menaces in execution, which the moſt innocent might not find it eaſy to guard againſt; beſides, it was univerſally and well known, that even if the whole affair could be detected, he was not able to make ſatisfaction. Thus every circumſtance concurred to give ſucceſs to his ſcheme, though not quite ſo ſmoothly as he could wiſh; and the poor young lady, having no redreſs, was obliged to return to the low ſtate from which ſhe had ſo lately been raiſed, and in which ſhe ſtill lives a life of ſervitude; happy had ſhe never been flattered with better hopes.

But though he could eſcape the reach of man, divine

juſtice

juſtice was not to be defeated ſo, whoſe vengeance attacked him in ſo ſignal a manner, as plainly ſhewed the juſt retaliation of the unerring hand of heaven.

Seared as his heart muſt be by ſuch a life, to the more general feelings of humanity, nature was not quite debauched, and he felt the tenderneſs and fond anxiety of paternal love in all its force for an only daughter, on whoſe education, in all the polite accompliſhments of the more exalted ranks of life, he ſpared neither pains nor expence, ſupporting and adorning her in the genteeleſt manner, and taking evident delight in laviſhing, on ſuch uſes, all that he could acquire by every poſſible means.

Such a conduct, though carried to an exceſs, had ſomething ſo amiable in it, that, in ſome meaſure, it palliated the blacker parts of his character, and even weakened the credit of many of the ſtories told of him: But juſt as he was beginning to enjoy the fruits of his care, by ſeeing his daughter's eminence in the accompliſhments he had taken ſuch pains to teach univerſally acknowledged, an event happened, that not only deprived him of that pleaſure, but alſo turned the merit of all his former fondneſs into the fouleſt reproach.

His daughter was obſerved, for ſome time, to bear the appearance of the moſt poignant diſtreſs. Whenever ſhe was aſked the cauſe of it, by any of her friends, ſhe would melt into a flood of tears, nor would give any other anſwer than that ſhe was the moſt miſerable of human beings. This raiſed a variety of conjectures, ſome of which were far from being advantageous to her: but at length the ſecret was revealed. She flew one day, in the utmoſt agony of diſtreſs, to a lady of her acquaintance, who had ſeemed to ſhew the livelieſt ſenſe of her grief, and begged her protection from the cruelty of her father, which, ſhe ſaid, was too great to be borne, ever ſince ſhe had refuſed to gratify an impious paſſion which he had long entertained for her, and which had been the motive of all his care and expence in her education.

Such ſtories are ſo ſhocking to human nature, that they

they are generally doubted; but his character gave ſuch weight to any charge againſt him, that this was univerſally believed. At firſt he made ſome efforts to induce his daughter to return to him; but ſhe was deaf to his ſolicitations, and being deſtitute of every other means of ſupport, threw herſelf upon the favour of the public, and lives by her ſkill in the accompliſhments which he took ſo much pains to have her taught. This was not only a ſevere mortification to his pride, but alſo made him be looked upon with ſuch horror and deteſtation, that he has been ever ſince ſecluded from the ſociety of every perſon of virtue or reputation.

I ſee you wonder at the inconſiſtency of ſuch a perſon's appearing in the ſituation you ſee him at preſent, contributing to a public charity, for the relief of the calamities of the poor. To one who can look no farther into man than as he appears at the preſent moment, ſuch a conduct juſtly appears unaccountable; but conſider, that theſe are the only places now open for him to mix with perſons of character and fortune: for inſtitutions of this kind make no diſtinctions of perſons, but receive, indiſcriminately, the benefactions of all who offer. Beſides, a genius ſo ready as his, can turn every thing to advantage, and extract profit even from giving charity. One inſtance of this kind of addreſs will prove the juſtice of this reflection, and ſhew, that in every action of his life, he really preſerves a conſiſtency of character.

Some years ago, *the ſea broke over its banks*, in a diſtant part of the kingdom, and not only laid the country waſte for a great extent, but alſo threatened the ruin of the whole, if ſome means were not immediately applied to put a ſtop to it. Such an exigence required inſtant care: the government ſent workmen directly to repair the breach, who were obliged to ſtruggle with all the ſeverities of the ſeaſon, in a moſt inhoſpitable climate, to effect their work, it being in the depth of winter, and the danger admitting of no delay.

So ſevere a ſervice naturally excited the compaſſion of this people, the moſt humane and generous under hea-

ven. Accordingly, a public ſubſcription was opened, to buy warm cloathing for *the labourers*, thus employed for the advantage of the public, which met with ſuch general approbation, that a fund ſufficient for the purpoſe was immediately raiſed. This perſon, from the reaſon hinted above, was one of the firſt ſubſcribers, and appeared moſt active in promoting the ſcheme, offering frequently to undertake the moſt troubleſome part of the conduct of it. But ſome of them, who were acquainted with his character, abſolutely refuſed to let him interfere in any manner that ſhould give him the leaſt power over the fund. However, as they did not think proper to make the motives of this caution public, he took an opportunity, one day, when they were indiſpenſibly obliged to be abſent, to renew his offer, which his aſſiduity and ſucceſs in ſoliciting ſubſcriptions gave ſuch weight to, that it was received, and he was appointed to purchaſe and ſend down ſome particular articles, that appeared to be immediately wanted, to pay for which, five hundred pounds were directly given into his hands.

This was what he had all along laboured for: accordingly, as ſoon as he received the money, he remitted of his aſſiduity, and came no more to their meetings, never taking the leaſt care about the things, for the purchaſe of which it had been given to him. So flagrant an act of injuſtice raiſed the reſentment of every one concerned; but that he was prepared for, and deſpiſed; and, when they required him to return the money, he gave them a bill for his own trouble, in which he charged every ſtep he had ever gone to ſolicit and promote the ſubſcription, and fees of agency for every ſhilling he had received and paid in the courſe of it, by which means he greatly overbalanced their demand.

Bare-faced as ſuch an impoſition was, they had no redreſs; for he had carefully made his charge according to the rates of his profeſſion; and, though it had been always the intention of every one to beſtow their labour as well as their money without any lucrative view of return, yet, as he had never entered into an actual engagement

to that effect, there was now no poſſibility of defeating his charge.

Such an attempt can never be made with ſucceſs a ſecond time, as the firſt inſtance raiſes a general alarm.—However, he ſtill perſiſts to join in every thing of the kind that is propoſed, in hopes of ſeizing ſome ſuch lucky opportunity as he did before. But it is eaſy to foreſee that he will be diſappointed, for though he exerts himſelf ſo ſtrenuouſly, and takes upon him to offer his advice and direction, as you ſee, the prejudice againſt him is ſo ſtrong, that every thing he ſays is ſuſpected of deſign, every thing he propoſes rejected, even without examining. Nay, ſo ſtrong is the deteſtation of him grown, ſince this affair of his daughter, that ſome ſocieties have refuſed him admiſſion, and others even gone ſo far as to expel him, in the moſt ignominious manner, from among them.

CHAP. XLI.

The repreſentation concluded with an eminent man-mid-wife. His motives for taking up that profeſſion, with ſome unfortunate anecdotes of his practice.

I SHALL now preſent you with a character, the folly of which is a ſhade to its virtues, and ſhews them through a medium of ridicule and contempt, more humbling to human vanity than the moſt atrocious vice.

Obſerve that ſkeleton, that figure of famine, who even after a feaſt looks as if he had faſted for a month, and was juſt ready to periſh for want. That is another of the principal promoters, and indeed ſupporters of public charity, from the beſt motives: his benefactions always flowing from the benevolence of his heart, though too often qualified in the manner by circumſtances that throw both the gift and giver into ridicule.

For ſuch is the vehemence of his temper, that, not ſatisfied with providing for the wants of the poor, he will ſee that the ſupplies which he beſtows are applied in the manner he directs, which introduces him too familiarly into the domeſtic diſtreſſes of the unhappy, many of whom would rather periſh for want, than make the

circumſtances of their wants known: nor is his fortune only devoted to thoſe uſes, his very perſonal ſervice is always ready, particularly in ſome caſes, where unfortunately, a motive of a different nature from his real one is liable to be miſtaken for it, by the malignant temper of the times.

There is no ſituation of human diſtreſs that calls ſo ſtrongly for compaſſion and relief, as child-birth. How ſevere then muſt the caſe of thoſe unhappy creatures be, who are left to ſtruggle through ſuch pangs, unaſſiſted, unprovided with any of the comforts, ſo neceſſary to ſupport nature in ſuch a conflict.

A ſenſe of this ſtruck his humane heart! He felt the diſtreſs and liberally ſupplied the relief. Well had he ſtopped here! But fearing that ſuch relief ſhould be miſapplied, or inſufficient, he would attend himſelf, to ſee that nothing was wanted; and at length, to make his aſſiſtance complete, learned the *obſtetric* art, and now neceſſarily has more buſineſs in it, as he pays for being employed, by the benefactions he beſtows, than any one member of the profeſſion.

Laudable as this care, and the motives of it are, it would have been much better, had not the ſanguineneſs of his temper hurried him ſo far! Had he been content to ſupply their wants, and let others, whoſe profeſſion it more immediately is, adminiſter relief. For now, what a field does it open for ill-natured ridicule, to ſee a man of his conſequence deſcend to offices, in the ordinary acceptation of the world, ſo far beneath him? How eaſy it is to ſay, how eaſy to be believed, that idle curioſity, or ſome groſſer motive, prompts to ſuch uncommon aſſiduity?

Nor is the evil of this indiſcretion confined to him alone; it reflects a kind of ridicule upon the very virtue it would ſerve; and makes leſs ſanguine minds refrain from the good, for fear they ſhould alſo ſhare in the reproach. For it is not ſufficient for a man to have the teſtimony of his own conſcience for the rectitude of his intentions; there is alſo a debt of appearance due to the

public

public, to avoid offence, and inculcate virtue by example. One inſtance will illuſtrate this, and ſhew the inconveniences of his inconſiderate zeal.

A poor woman applied to him for relief ſome time before the moment. According to his cuſtom, he ſupplied her neceſſities, and took a direction where to call and ſee her. The woman, either miſtaken herſelf, or tempted by diſtreſs to deceive him, told him a wrong time, which made him come too ſoon; and, as he always made her ſome charitable preſent whenever he came, ſhe ſtill found ſome complaints to induce him to repeat his viſits.

At length the frequency of his coming took the notice of the alley in which ſhe lived, who could not conceive any honeſt buſineſs that a gentleman of his fine appearance could have with ſuch a poor woman, in ſo obſcure a place; and, as ſuch remarks are always improved, ſome *friend* hinted to the woman's huſband, a labouring man who was at his work all day, and therefore could not be witneſs of his diſgrace that his wife had *many* improper viſitors come to her, and muſt certainly have taken to bad courſes, to encourage ſuch doings.

The cuckold in imagination went directly home in the greateſt rage at his diſhonour, but the name of the viſitor, and an aſſurance that there came no other, ſoon pacified him, eſpecially as a ready thought ſtruck him, that he might turn the good man's humanity to an advantage, of a nature very different from what he had deſigned; for the fellow was well ſupplied with what is called *mother-wit*, which want had ſharpened and freed from every reſtraint of honeſty. He therefore ſullenly told his wife, that it might be ſo as ſhe ſaid, but he would have a better proof than her word for it, and therefore ſhe muſt let him ſee her viſitor the next time he came, and, as ſhe valued her life, aſſent to every thing which he, her huſband, ſhould do or ſay.

The readineſs of her conſent encouraged him to open his deſign to her, which her nuptial obedience and hopes

of gain, made her not only give into, but ſhe alſo improved the ſcheme to a certainty of ſucceſs.

The huſband accordingly, having prepared ſome of his aſſociates, placed them properly, the next time the gentleman went to viſit his wife, who immediately, upon his coming into the room, began to *cry out*, and implore his aſſiſtance.

Though the buſineſs came a little inconveniently upon him, as he was full dreſſed, he would not deſert her in her diſtreſs, but directly ſet about giving her the neceſſary aſſiſtance, in the hurry of which, ſome unlucky ſtoop burſt the ſtring that tied his breeches behind, and down they fell about his heels.

Though this diſaſter diſconcerted him a good deal, the cries of his patient would not give him time to adjuſt himſelf, but he was proceeding in his buſineſs, with the moſt anxious aſſiduity, when in ruſhed the huſband with his gang, and rewarded his care with a ſtroke that felled him, fettered as he was in his breeches to the ground.

The ſcene was now changed! the woman no longer in labour, cried only for revenge, *on the baſe man who had attempted her virtue*, as the witneſſes preſent atteſted they had heard her before, and now caught him in the very fact; which the poſture he was in, and, above all, the circumſtance of his breeches, too ſtrongly confirmed, to the crowd whom the noiſe had drawn together.

Terrified almoſt to death at the threats of the enraged huſband, who could hardly be held from taking perſonal vengeance that very moment, and ſenſible of the conſequence ſhould public fame catch hold of ſuch a tale, the poor *criminal* threw himſelf on his knees, and, convinced that all vindication of his innocence would be in vain, beſought only a compoſition for his offence.

This was juſt what the parties wanted; but ſtill to increaſe his terrors, and enhance the price of his eſcape, ſuch difficulties were raiſed, as made him glad to yield to any terms they could impoſe; and, accordingly, he not only purged himſelf of having done any actual diſhonour to her huſband, for the intention they would not

permit

permit him to controvert, but alſo made ſatisfaction to his reſentment for the attempt, with one hundred pounds, for which, as he had not a ſum immediately about him, he gave a draught on his banker, and waited in *dureſſe*, till the arrival of it releaſed him.

This misfortune made him more cautious for ſome time; but he begins to forget it now, and goes on *with his buſineſs* as before. One thing, indeed, he takes ſufficient care about, and that is, that the waiſt of his breeches is properly ſecured: for ſo ſtrong is the impreſſion, which that accident made upon him, that he never walks a dozen ſteps without pulling them up.

You ſee moſt of them begin to nod, I ſhall therefore draw the curtain here and leave them to their nap, with this obſervation, that a few ſuch examples as the clergyman, and many of the kind there are, particularly eminent in this exalted virtue of charity, in both the ſexes, are ſufficient to take off the prejudice which the others muſt excite, and to preſerve the proper reſpect to principles they propoſe to imitation.

CHAP. XLII.

Some account of the officers of the charity. Their care of themſelves. They fall out about the diviſion of the ſpoil. A terrible uproar is appeaſed by a demand of general concern. The conciſe manner of paſſing public accounts. Chryſal changes his ſervice.

WHEN I had taken a ſufficient view of the governors, I had leiſure to turn my obſervations to the ſervants of the ſociety, whoſe behaviour raiſed an indignation too ſtrong to be expreſſed by words.

If the governors feaſted, they paid for their feaſting; but the ſervants feaſted no leſs, and were paid for it! Nor was this enormity confined to this day; their whole time was one continued ſcene of it, and much the greater part of the contributions of the public was proſtituted to this abominable abuſe: while the poor, for whoſe relief they were given, too often languiſhed in want of the meaneſt neceſſaries, the fund being inſuffi-

cient for their wants, and the luxury and wages of their ſervants.

I was diverted from theſe reflections, by an uproar, in one of the private apartments of the houſe, where ſome of the ſuperior ſervants had got together over a bottle of wine, to ſettle their reſpective dividends of the ſubſcriptions of the day. I call them ſervants, for that is the proper appellation of all who ſerve for hire. As I was yet undiſpoſed of, to any particular perſon, I had it in my power, as I have told you before, to range through the whole territories of the ſociety to which I belonged, and therefore flew to ſee what might be the cauſe of this riot, in ſo improper a place, where I was witneſs to ſuch a ſcene as almoſt tranſcends belief.

At the upper end of the table ſat the treaſurer, for it would be a reproach to the pooreſt ſociety to have fewer officers than the ſtate, with his accounts before him. After a bumper to the ſucceſs of the charity. 'Mr. 'Steward,' ſaid he, 'our ſubſcriptions have been ſo good 'this year, that I think we may venture to enlarge our 'ſalaries, a little; for laſt year they were really ſcarce 'worth a gentleman's acceptance.'

'That is true,' replied the ſteward, 'and I believe we 'may enlarge the houſe allowance too, for, upon the 'preſent eſtabliſhment, it is hardly enough for the days 'we meet here, and will not afford any thing to carry 'home, to entertain a friend with, as a gentleman 'would deſire:—it is but ſwelling ſome of the ſick ar-'ticles, which at preſent are ſcarce above the con-'ſumption. When I was overſeer of the pariſh, we 'managed things better. We then lived like gentle-'men: nay, I remember when I was church-warden, 'that we ſpent the whole ſummer, jaunting about the 'country, in purſuit of a gentleman, who had a child 'ſworn to him; for fifty-ſhillings, which he had been 'ordered to pay, till the bill of our expences came to 'fifteen pounds; and yet no-body could ſay againſt it: 'ſo that it is our own fault, if we do not live well.'

'Right,' joined the apothecary, 'nor was the appoint-

'ment

'ment for medicines any way ſufficient. Had half 'what the phyſicians preſcribed been given, there 'would have been nothing to be got by the contract.'— 'How, Mr. Apothecary,' returned the cook with a ſneer, 'nothing to be got! pray was not all you got 'clear gain? I am ſure, from the benefit received by 'the patients, there did not appear to have been any 'thing above brick-duſt, or powder of rotten poſt, in 'any of the ſtuffs they took!'

'Pray S—S—Sir,' ſtuttered the apothecary, in a rage, 'wh—wh—what's that you ſay? Who m—m—'made you a judge of medicines!'—'Not you, I thank 'God, Sir,' ſaid the cook, 'as my health ſhews. But 'I have a good reaſon for what I ſay; for though I 'put double the quantity of meat in my broth, I could 'not prevent the people's dying, nor make the few who 'recovered, able to go out in twice the uſual time.'— '—S—S—Sir, 'tis all a d—d—dam'd lie. Their d-- 'd—dying was occaſioned by the p—p—poorneſs of the 'b—b—broth, and the badneſs of their p—p—provi- 'ſions, and not by the w—w—want of medicines; and 'I'll p—p—prove it, Sir; and how you ſup—p—p— 'ported your family on the m—m—meat that ſhould 'have been d—d—dreſſed for the ſick!'—'You'll prove 'it, Sir! Take care that you do! Gentlemen! take 'notice of what he ſays! This is ſtriking at my charac- 'ter; and muſt affect my bread.'

'That is true, Mr. Cook,' ſaid the ſecretary, who had been an attorney's clerk, 'and whatever ſtrikes at 'a man's character, ſo as to affect his bread, is action- 'able.'—'B—b—but, Sir, he attacked my ch—cha— 'character firſt, and I'll b—b—b—bring my action too.' 'So you may, Sir,' replied the lawyer, 'the action will 'lie on both ſides.'

The diſputes had hitherto been kept up with ſuch heat, that the company could not interpoſe a word to pacify them, but the mention of the law made it every one's concern in a moment. 'Silence, gentlemen,' ſaid the treaſurer, raiſing ſlowly his auguſt bulk, and ſtriking his

hand

hand upon the table: 'Silence, I ſay, and let me hear 'no more of this brawling. Mr. Cook! Mr. Apothe-'cary! what do you both mean? To diſcover the ſecrets 'of our ſociety, and to blow us all up at once? You both 'heard me ſay, that every thing which was wrong ſhould 'be adjuſted! Could you not wait for that, without fall-'ing into this indecent, this unprofitable wrangle? As 'for you, Mr. Secretary, the leaven of your profeſſion 'will break out; it is ſufficient to infect the whole maſs. 'Is this your promiſe, your oath, to follow your bu-'ſineſs, and do as you were ordered, quietly and impli-'citly, without meddling any farther, or perplexing us 'with the tricks of your former trade? But it was in 'vain to expect it. A lawyer can as well live without 'food, as without fomenting quarrels, and ſetting his 'neighbours together by the ears. Bring an action in-'deed! and ſo betray our myſtery to the impertinent 'remarks of counſellors, and the ſcoffs of Templers and 'attorney's clerks. Let me hear one word more of the 'kind, and this moment I declare off all connexion, and 'leave every man to ſhift for himſelf. Our general oath 'of ſecrecy, atteſted under our hands, ſecures me from 'information, as it would invalidate the teſtimony of us 'all.'

With theſe words, he turned about to leave the room, when the ſteward, catching him by the breaſt, pulled him into his chair, and holding him down, *by main force*, addreſſed him thus:

'Good God, ſir, what do you mean! to take notice 'of the warmth of madmen, who know not what they 'ſay: you, Mr. Treaſurer, have moved in an higher 'ſphere of life, and ought to be above ſuch things. *You* 'were not raiſed from the cleaning the ſhoes of a petti-'fogging attorney, in whoſe drudgery you loſt your 'ears! from being ſcullion in a nobleman's kitchen, or 'ſervant of a mountebank, to diſpenſe his packets to 'the mob! *You* were not raiſed, I ſay, from any of 'theſe ſtations to the rank of a gentleman, by this office, 'and ſhould be above taking offence at the low-lived be-

'haviour

'haviour of ſuch creatures who know no better.'—'Nor 'w—w—w—was I a full-handed ten-times b—b—b— 'bankrupt,' interrupted the apothecary, as he would have done ſooner, had rage left him power of utterance, 'that b—b—b—being unable to get credit any l—l— 'l—longer, came from cheating the p—p—p—public, 'to cheating the p—p—p—poor! nor a c—c—c—caſt 'off, worn out p—p—p—pimping footman, whoſe dirty 'ſervices w—w—were rewarded with this place.'

This made the madneſs general, and they were juſt going to proceed to blows, when the porter entered haſtily, and told them the committee were adjourned to their chamber, and ſent for their accounts, to ſit upon them directly.

This brought them all to their ſenſes, and made them friends in a moment. 'Gentlemen,' ſaid the treaſurer, 'we have all been too hot, all to blame; but let 'there be no more of it! Let us agree among ourſelves, 'and we may defy the world.'

Upon this a general ſhake of the hand put an end to the whole conteſt, and they proceeded to buſineſs, as if no ſuch thing had ever happened, unanimous in their endeavours to cheat the public, and fatten on the ſpoils of the poor.

By that time the committee had ſmoked a pipe, and drank their coffee, the accounts were laid before them, over which they nodded a few moments, and then paſſed them without exceptions. The next thing was to pay the ſalaries of the officers, in which diſtribution it fell to my lot to be given to the chaplain.

CHAP. XLIII.

Some remarks on language. Character of Chryſal's new maſter. Chryſal attends his maſter's wife on a viſit to a ſuperior lady. Polite reception.

I HAVE often been apprehenſive that the manner in which I expreſs myſelf may lead you into ſome miſtakes of my meaning, the ſignification of words, in the language of men, being ſo unſettled, that it is ſcarce poſſible to convey a determinate ſenſe, without ſuch a

periphraſis

periphraſis as would take up too much time in ſuch complicated ſcenes as thoſe I deſcribe; for where different, or perhaps contrary, meanings are ſignified by the ſame word, how eaſy it is for a mind prone to error to take the wrong one!

For inſtance, the character of a good man may be thought to be as ſafe from miſapprehenſion, from the immutability of the virtues which conſtitute it, as any that can be attributed either by, or to human frailty: and yet how variouſly, how contradictorily, is it appiled!

On the *Royal-Exchange*, he is a *good man* who is worth ten thouſand pounds, and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private and public frauds and injuſtice he has amaſſed that ſum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, *goodneſs* aſſumes another appearance, and is attributed to him who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and ſupports his honour with his ſword, though he is guilty of the baſeſt breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in profeſſed violation of all laws human and divine: while in the ſtrictneſs of truth, and propriety of expreſſion, no geater abuſe of words can be conceived, than that of proſtituting this character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern, modiſh way of ſpeaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only inſtance: they are innumerable, and occur in every moment's converſation. The horſe that wins the match, goes *damn'd* faſt; as the one that loſes, goes *damn'd* ſlow. The weather in ſummer is *hell-fire* hot, in winter *hell-fire* cold.

Now, what ſenſe can the very *Devil* himſelf, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of ſuch contradictions? Though, indeed, theſe particular phraſes give him pleaſure, as they ſhew the inclination which men have to his empire, by making the very terrors of it familiar to their minds in their common converſation.

But I am not at leiſure to preſcribe rules for avoiding this confuſion, one of the moſt extenſive cauſes of hu-

man

man error. I ſhall only give you ſome cautions to prevent your falling into it, in reſpect to what I ſay to you.

You are to obſerve, then, that whenever I ſpeak in the perſon of another, I always would be underſtood in the ſenſe which that perſon would be underſtood in at that time, without any further regard to moral, or phyſical truth, or propriety of ſpeech. But, when I ſpeak my own ſentiments (which indeed I very rarely do,) I ſhall always deliver them with perſpicuity and preciſion, as far as the jargon I am obliged to uſe will allow, and would have my words taken in the ſenſe uſually given to them, in the particular ſubject I may be then ſpeaking of; as the barrenneſs of language has not been able to afford diſtinct terms to them all, but is forced to wreſt known ones to different, and often unknown meanings; a proof of the injuſtice of the general complaint againſt the verboſity of the moderns; whereas, if (by many,) diſtinct words are meant, their fault is directly the reverſe.

My new maſter was a perſon of ſome learning, and what was of more uſe, of thorough knowledge of the world; but wanting friends and intereſt to advance him to thoſe dignities which he thought due to his merit, he had ſolicited this place, in diſcharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably diligent, not merely for the paltry conſideration of a poor ſalary (for, as he was not in the ſecret, he had no ſhare of the ſpoils,) though his circumſtances and knowledge of the value of money could not let him refuſe it, but to place his abilities in a more conſpicuous light, where they might take the notice of his ſuperiors.

As ſoon as he had received his ſtipend, he went home, where he found his wife dreſſed in all her beſt cloaths, and expecting him with the utmoſt impatience! 'My 'dear,' ſaid ſhe, 'how could you ſtay abroad ſo late? 'I have been waiting for you above theſe two hours, 'and was juſt going without ſeeing you.'—'So late, 'my dear! it is ſcarcely ſix o'clock! But where are 'you going in ſuch haſte?'—'To the Biſhop's! the

'Rector

'Rector of——died in an apoplectic fit as he was taking his nap after dinner this evening, and you know, my intimacy with the Biſhop's lady intitles me to aſk any thing from her.'—'But, child, this is not in her power to give, and, even if it was, it is too much for a common acquaintance to expect!'—'This diffidence has been your ruin! You are always afraid of aſking, as if there was ruin in being refuſed; but that is not the caſe! Aſk and you ſhall have, is my text! Now-a days, nothing is got without it.'—'Yes, child, but too frequent and improper aſking brings contempt.'—'The manner—the manner of aſking is the thing! And you cannot think I want to be taught that now, after having lived ſo long among the Great! Often have I known a requeſt *properly* made gain a man a place, for which he was never dreamed of! As to the greatneſs of this living, never mind that! the greater it is, the greater will be your obligation to the perſon who gets it for you! What money have you got about you? We ſhall make a *party* perhaps. And let me have the five hundred pound note; I may have occaſion for that too, to make a *bett*.'

'There, my dear, is the money I received to-day! I'll ſtep up for the note: but, my deareſt, take care what you do! It is our all! and be ſure you are not tempted to any thing like ſimony: it is a great crime, and makes a man incapable of ever riſing, if it is detected.'—'And the fool that is detected deſerves never to riſe! You may call a thing by what nonſenſical name you pleaſe; but, if knowledge of the world were to prevent people's riſing in it, I do not know who would be uppermoſt now-a-days! Bring me the note, and leave the reſt to me. You ſhall know nothing of what I intend till it is done, and then the fault, if any, will be all mine!—Here, Jane, ſettle the furbellows of my ſcarf, and, John, call a chair to the door directly.'—'Well, my dear, here is the note: I leave all to you: I do not deſire to know what you intend: but remember, my dear, this note is our all!'

'Never

'Never fear: the chair is come, and I muſt loſe no 'time: you will divert yourſelf with your children, or 'books, I ſuppoſe; or go to the coffee-houſe. Per-'haps I may not return till it is late.'—'I wiſh you 'ſucceſs, my dear, and pray be cautious.'

With theſe words the doctor retired, but to which of the amuſements his wife mentioned I cannot ſay, for he had given me to her, who carried me away to the biſhop's.

When ſhe came there, the footman anſwered, that it was not his lady's *night*, and ſhe was not at home: but my miſtreſs had lived too long among the great, to take his words in their literal meaning, and putting half-a-crown into his hand, told him ſhe had ſome earneſt buſineſs, and muſt ſee her. The doors inſtantly flew open, his lady was at home, and my miſtreſs ſhewn up without any farther difficulty.

The biſhop's lady was ſitting at a ſnug *party*, with three or four ſelect friends, and ſeemed not much pleaſed at the intruſion of my miſtreſs, to whom ſhe ſcarce deigned a nod, but turning to the footman, 'I thought, *ſir-'rah*,' ſaid ſhe, 'that I was not to be at home this 'evening! I ſuppoſe I ſhall have all the mob of the 'town let in upon me.'—'Dear madam,' replied my miſtreſs, 'the man is not to blame: he told me you 'were not at home; but, having ſome very earneſt bu-'ſineſs, I made bold to break through your orders; but 'hope for your pardon when you know the cauſe of my 'intruſion.'—'O madam,' returned the lady, 'you 'know I am always glad of your company. I only 'chide the fellow for not obeying my orders. Pray 'be ſeated, madam; as ſoon as the *rubber* is up I ſhall 'wait upon you.'—'Dear madam,' added my miſtreſs, 'you need not give yourſelf that trouble; now I am 'with you my buſineſs can wait your leiſure.'

CHAP. XLIV.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bet, and a family ſupper. Conjugal tenderneſs. The biſhop's dejection at the death of the doctor, and danger of the archbiſhop, is diverted by another dream.

WHEN

WHEN the rubber was finiſhed, my miſtreſs was aſked to *cut in*, one of the party being taken ſuddenly ill, which ſhe did, and ſat out the whole evening, her ſucceſs at cards keeping up her ſpirits, and giving her hopes of the like in the greater affair ſhe came about: but her patroneſs had very different fortune, having loſt every rubber; and, what was ſtill worſe, ſeveral *by-bets*, which ſhe made *to bring herſelf home*.

This put her into ſuch a temper, that the moment the reſt of the company was gone, ſhe turned to my miſtreſs, who ſaw them all out—'And now pray, madam, 'may I aſk you what was the great buſineſs that 'brought you here this evening?' ſaid ſhe. 'Unlucky 'buſineſs it has been for me, I know; for I have ne-'ver held a card ſince you came: but I ſhall take care 'that raſcal who let you in ſhall never ſerve me ſo again! 'He ſhall ſtrip and turn off, without his breakfaſt, the 'moment I am up in the morning.'—'Dear madam,' replied my miſtreſs, unabaſhed at ſuch a ſalute, 'have 'patience a moment, and I hope to make you amends 'for all! Will you pleaſe to ſit down to one ſober 'party of *piquet?* You are always too *hard* for me, 'yet I'll venture all my winnings, and perhaps what I 'have to ſay in the mean time may compenſate for my 'intruſion.'

The lady could not imagine what ſhe meant, but the thought of ſo good a match brought her a little to her temper, and, though it was near ten o'clock, ſhe ſat down to cards with as much keenneſs, as if ſix hours drudging at them had only whetted her deſire for play.

As ſoon as a *repique* or two had confirmed her good humour, my miſtreſs ſays to her, 'Dear madam, that is 'right: have you heard of the ſad accident that hap-'pened this evening?'—'Not I,' replied the other, 'pray what was it?'—'Why poor Dr. ———, was 'taken ill ſhortly after dinner, and died in his chair!' 'Ah, then, I ſuppoſe he had plum-porridge, and over-'eat himſelf! and ſo burſt a pudding, as we ſay to chil-'dren. Ha, ha, ha!'—'Ha, ha, ha!—But, pray

'madam,

'madam, have you any faith in dreams? What do
'you think? I dreamed laſt night that I ſaw you at
'court, on ſome *great* occaſion, with juſt ſuch a dia-
'mond necklace on as the counteſs's, which you had
'bought with five hundred pounds that you won from
'me on a *bet*; you laying that my huſband would, and
'I that he would not, get the doctor's living! Well,
'to be ſure, there muſt be ſomething more than ordinary
'in it; for, can you believe it? this very morning I
'put a bank-note for five hundred pounds in my pocket,
'here it is; though I did not think of the poor man's
'death till I heard it as I came by this evening, when
'the dream ran ſo ſtrongly in my head, that I could
'not forbear breaking in upon you, a rudeneſs I never
'ſhould have been guilty of on any other occaſion.'—
'Dear madam, you need make no apology to me: you
'know your company is always welcome, I am always
'at home to you!'—'But, madam, what do you
'think of my dream?'—'I don't know. I only wiſh
'it were to prove true! For five hundred pounds could
'never come more ſeaſonably.'—'Then you muſt win
'it; for my heart is ſet upon making the *bet*; and I
'aſſure you, I have ſuch a regard for you, that I do
'not even wiſh you to loſe: and that is what few game-
'ſters can ſay.'—'You are a pleaſant creature: but as
'for the *bet*, it ſhall be upon condition that my lord is
'not under any engagement to the miniſter, or her grace
'who got him the biſhopric. If he is diſengaged, I
'will lay you, and you ſhall loſe, my girl, if it was ten
'times as much, and there's encouragement for you to
'hold. The bell rings: will you walk down and take
'a bit of ſupper? There is nobody but my lord and I;
'but do not take the leaſt notice of any thing about the
'matter, nor even ſeem to have heard of the doctor's
'death, ſhould my lord mention it; but muſter all your
'ſpirits, and be as entertaining as you can, for I al-
'ways work him up beſt when he goes to bed in a good
'humour.'

The piquet match being thus at an end, I was paid

away to the biſhop's lady, whoſe winnings and expectations ſent her to ſupper in high ſpirits, where ſhe found his lordſhip already ſeated in a very thoughtful mood.

After the uſual complimentary expletives that uſher in every polite converſation, 'Pray, my lord,' ſays my new miſtreſs to her huſband, 'what will you eat? Shall 'I help you to a bit of this fricaſſee? I believe it is 'very good.'—'No, my dear, I thank you,' replied his lordſhip, 'I have not the leaſt appetite! What is it, 'pray?'—'Sweet-breads and cock's-combs,' returned his lady, 'you uſed to like them, and they are very 'nice: or will you help yourſelf to a bit of that fowl 'before you? Something you muſt eat.'—'No, my 'dear, I am obliged to your care; but I do not chuſe 'any thing to-night: I am not very well! We all eat 'too much! Repletion kills half the people of England: 'we eat too much!'—'You are going to be *hipped* my 'dear: John, give your maſter a glaſs of Madeira: fill 'the glaſs: eating never hurt any one, who waſhed down 'his victuals with a glaſs of good wine; horſe-meals, 'indeed, are enough to choak human creatures. So! 'do not you find yourſelf better now? Taſte this fri-'caſſee; you cannot think how good it is!'—'Well, 'you will have your way, you may do as you pleaſe, 'though never ſo contrary to my inclinations! Do you 'call this a fricaſſee? I thought fricaſſees had ſpice put 'in them: this is as inſipid as chopped hay: Lord de-'liver us from ſuch cooks: the badneſs of ſervants, in 'general, ſeems to be a judgment on the vices of the 'age?'—'Well, my dear, taſte that fowl, it looks like 'a good one, and the cook could not ſpoil that. Pray, 'madam, ſhall I trouble you to help his lordſhip to a 'leg, and a wing, and a bit of the breaſt.'—'You 'give me too much, I ſhall never be able to eat all this: 'beſide, you know, my dear, I chuſe a bit of the rump.' 'Eat that firſt, my dear, and then you ſhall have the 'rump: but what has happened to make you ſo low-'ſpirited this evening?'—'O child, who can be other 'than low-ſpirited, when ſuch inſtances of mortality

'happen

'happen before our eyes every hour? Who can tell
'but the misfortune may be his own next moment?
'There's doctor ——, poor man, was taken off this
'evening, without a minute's warning to prepare for
'such a tremendous change, just after he had made an
'hearty dinner! Here, John, take away my plate; I
'will not eat a bit more, nor ever sleep after dinner
'again!'—'And, John, give your master another bum-
'per of Madeira; that was what the doctor wanted,
'he eat a great deal, and did not allow himself any
'drink. Drink good wine, and never fear that eating
'will hurt you.'—'Ah! but that was not the case of his
'grace of ————, who lies this moment in the ago-
'nies of death: his physicians left him two hours ago!
'the Lord prepare us all, and give us notice of his com-
'ing! He did not stint himself of wine; he took his
'bottle cheerfully, good man!'—'Cheerfully, did you
'say? I should have said sottishly; for he has done no-
'thing but drink for these many years past: he has run
'into the opposite extreme from the doctor, drinking
'too much, and not eating enough to support nature.
'And I hope you do not say he is gone without warn-
'ing at fourscore? He has had time enough to prepare:
'but why should these examples affect you particularly?
'You do not eat like the doctor, nor drink like his
'grace, and are young enough to be son to the youngest
'of them; why then should you fear their fate? Here,
'John, give me a pint glass half full of Madeira, and
'reach me three or four of those jellies. Now, my dear,
'if you are afraid to eat or drink, sup this with a
'bit of bread, and I will answer for its agreeing with
'you.'

My late mistress sat all this time at her supper, without being able to join in the conversation; but as soon as his lordship's taking the jellies made a pause in his lady's tenderness, she called for a glass of wine, and, bowing to the bishop, drank to him by the title of *his grace* very gravely.

His lordship started, and his lady stared, while she fi-

niſhed her glaſs without any emotion, and ſeemed quite unconſcious of having ſaid any thing unuſual or improper. This behaviour ſtill embarraſſed them more; when the lady, unable to contain her ſurpriſe, 'Dear ma-'dam,' ſaid ſhe, 'what have you ſaid? Or how came you to addreſs my lord by that title?'—'I hope, madam, replied the other, 'I have not ſaid any thing improper! 'You really frighten me! I hope I have not been failing 'in my reſpect, or addreſſed his lordſhip by any impro-'per title?'—'I cannot ſay an improper one, indeed! 'but one that does not belong to him, at leaſt as yet,' returned the lady. 'Dear madam, what do you mean? 'Pray do not diſtreſs me! But you muſt divert yourſelf 'ſurely! It is not poſſible that I could fail in any reſpect 'to his grace!'—'Ha, ha, ha! There it is again! Fail 'in your reſpect! No. You only raiſed your reſpect too 'high! You called him his grace, that's all.'—'And 'is that all? Thank heaven that I did! and long live 'his grace, I ſay again,' ſaid ſhe dropping on her knees, and eagerly kiſſing his hand, 'long live your grace! 'There is, there muſt be truth in dreams, and infidels 'alone can doubt it.'

At the mention of dreams, the biſhop, who had hitherto continued to ſip up his jelly without ſeeming to take any notice of what they were ſaying, could not forbear ſhowing ſome emotion; for he had the ſtrongeſt faith in them, and always ſanguinely defended their credit, eſpecially ſince his preſent elevation had confirmed thoſe of his grandmother: 'What dreams, pray, good madam?' ſaid he, addreſſing my late miſtreſs with a viſible anxiety. 'What dreams do you mean? Thoſe which were 'thought to have reſpect to me are underſtood to be al-'ready accompliſhed.'—'Pleaſe your grace, the impulſe 'of the ſpirit is upon me, and I cannot call you by any 'other title! Pleaſe your grace, I ſay, I dreamed laſt 'night, as I told your lady but juſt now, that I met her 'at court, on ſome very *great* occaſion, as fine as hands 'could make her (I told her this juſt now, before I knew one ſyllable of his grace's death) and that ſhe came up

'to me ſmiling, and thanked me for the cauſe of her 'coming there, for it was I who had made you a great 'man! Now, what could this poſſibly mean, but what 'has happened here this moment, when, by giving you this 'title firſt (and, Lord knows, I did it without the leaſt 'deſign, or even being ſenſible of it when I did it) I 'may in ſome manner be ſaid to have made you the great 'man it belonged to: let the world ſay what they will, 'I do believe there is truth in dreams, and I think mine 'is *out* now.'

She had ran on with this rant at ſuch a rate, that it was impoſſible for the biſhop to interrupt her, even had he been ſo inclined; but that was far from being the caſe: he heard her with attention, and what ſhe ſaid made ſuch an impreſſion on him, that he ſat ſome time muſing on it, after ſhe had ſtopped before he had power to ſpeak a word.

As for his lady, ſhe at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the ſcheme of the wager about the doctor's living, and as ſuch reſolved to humour it, and not interrupt his meditations, but addreſſing herſelf to the other, 'Indeed, madam,' ſaid ſhe, 'I do 'not know what to ſay to this affair! When you told 'me your dream juſt now, I made nothing of it, but 'this account of his grace's death almoſt ſtaggers me! 'Well, if this ſucceeds, and who knows what may 'happen, I ſhall ever hereafter have more faith in 'dreams?'

CHAP. XLV.

A diſſertation on dreaming. The dream purſued to the aſtoniſhment, and almoſt converſion of the biſhop's lady. Her veracity in recounting ſome circumſtances relating to it. She and his lordſhip perſuade each other to dream that it is true.

BY this time his lordſhip had conſidered the matter, and addreſſing himſelf to the dreamer, 'Pray, ma-'dam,' ſaid he, 'what time had you this viſion or 'dream? In the night, or towards the morning?'— 'In the morning, my lord,' replied ſhe, 'at the con-

'cluſion

'cluſion of my ſecond ſleep: and, indeed, it made ſuch 'an impreſſion upon my mind, that I could not go to 'ſleep after: for it was not in the confuſion of common 'dreams! I ſaw every thing diſtinctly and regularly, 'as if I was in the very place; and particularly your 'lady appeared as plainly to me as ſhe ſits there, Lord 'bleſs us! and by the ſame token ſhe was dreſſed in white 'damaſk, ſpick and ſpan new, and had the moſt beauti-'ful diamond necklace on that ever my eyes beheld; and 'charmingly ſhe looked I thought.'

'I really do not know what to ſay to this matter,' replied his lordſhip with great deliberation, 'the viſions 'of the morning have ever been held in moſt repute, for 'then the mind has recovered from the fatigues of the 'preceding day, and is able to exert its abilities, and 'look forward into the time to come. There are ſome 'good circumſtances I own in this dream! I am glad that 'my wife was not dreſſed in colours; that would have 'been an ill omen; but white is the peculiar garment of 'ſucceſs, angels are clad in white: and in this caſe par-'ticularly, it may prefigure the epiſcopal lawn, as that 'is an emblematical type of the purity of the epiſcopal 'function; and the epiſcopal and archiepiſcopal differ 'only in degree. As for the necklace, there may be 'more in that alſo than is apprehended. Precious ſtones 'are the *inſignia* of dignity, and in the Jewiſh prieſt-'hood, particularly, were ſymbolical of the higheſt or-'der; for none of the prieſts wore them but the ſupreme 'or high prieſt, whoſe dignity anſwered nearly to that 'of primate with us; and if ſuch further bleſſings 'ſhould be the divine will, it were impious and ungrate-'ful to refuſe its favours. Perhaps I ſpeak unintelli-'gibly to you; but the opinions of the learned muſt be 'delivered in their phraſe.'—'Pray, my lord, proceed; 'I could hear your lordſhip for ever; I am always the 'wiſer and the better for hearing your lordſhip.'

'Then, as to the credit to be given to dreams,' re-ſumed his lordſhip, 'though the ſcepticiſm of theſe un-'happy times may deny it, yet the piety of wiſer anti-

'quity

'quity was of another opinion, of which numberleſs in-
'ſtances might be given out of the holy ſcriptures.—
'And among the Gentiles, the greateſt of their poets ſays,

"Ονας εκ διος εϛι."

'That is, in Engliſh, *Dreams proceed from* Jove, that
'is, from the ſupreme Deity, whom they erroneouſly,
'called by that name. And though the heathens were
'guilty of great ſuperſtitions in this particular of dreams,
'it was not in the credit they gave them, but in the me-
'thods which they uſed to procure them; ſuch as offer-
'ing ſacrifices, and ſleeping in the ſkins of the victims,
'and many others; whereas the dream that comes
'from heaven, comes unſought and unexpected, and
'ſhould be received with reverence! And if this is
'ſuch, and I own it has much of the appearance, Thy
'will be done, O Lord! Thy ſervant ſubmits as it is
'his duty.'

Greatly as they muſt have been edified by this elaborate diſſertation, the ladies had much ado to refrain from laughing in his face while he delivered it, eſpecially his wife, who knew not which to admire moſt, the readineſs of the thought, or the eaſe with which it was received. But the dreamer had a further ſcheme in her head, to carry on which ſhe now got up to go away; and bending the knee to the biſhop, 'My lord,' ſaid ſhe, 'may I
'beg your lordſhip's bleſſing! I hope, and I am con-
'fident in that hope, that mine was not a common
'dream, from the impreſſion it made on my mind, which
'could not have been ſtronger, if I had actually been
'preſent at your lady's kiſſing the king's hand, on
'your promotion; but, if my zeal has hurried me too
'far in my expreſſions of it, I rely on your goodneſs to
'forgive my fault, which was rather an enthuſiaſm than
'a deſign; and ſo, my lord, I beg leave to wiſh you a
'good night.'

With theſe words ſhe withdrew; and her patroneſs wondering ſhe had not thrown her a wink, and deſirous to have a laugh with her at her huſband's credulity,

went

went as to ſee her to her chair; when turning with her into another room, 'That was an excellent thought,' ſaid ſhe, 'and will make our affair quite eaſy if he is not 'engaged.'—'I do not underſtand you, madam,' replied the other, 'pray what thought do you mean?'—'Why, child, that of the dream; what elſe ſhould I 'mean?'—'A thought, dear madam! Why do not 'you think I was ſerious, and the dream real?'—'Not 'one word of either, I aſſure you; and I wonder at your 'aſking me that queſtion here, where no one is preſent 'to obſerve us.'—'Dear madam you have quite miſta-'ken me, I aſſure you. It is true, I can jeſt ſome-'times; but in this give me leave to ſay, that I was 'moſt ſerious; and what is more, that I am ſure the 'event will confirm it.'—'You aſtoniſh me, madam; 'I declare, I looked upon the whole as a mere *fineſſe* to 'promote our ſcheme about the doctor's living for your 'huſband!'—'I am ſorry, madam, that you ſhould 'have ſuch an opinion of me, as that I could invent ſuch 'a ſtory on any account.'—'Well, (as I ſaid before, 'though in another ſenſe) I know not what to make of 'the whole! But as you are ſo poſitive, and my lord 'ſeems inclined to believe you, perhaps there may be 'more in it than I can ſee; and therefore I ſhall ſuſpend 'my opinion till I ſee the end of it. This though I 'promiſe, that my aſſiſtance ſhall not be wanting to 'either part of the dream.'—'And I promiſe you that 'I will make good all I ſaid, particularly about the wa-'ger and the necklace; and ſo, madam, I wiſh you a 'good night. I ſhall do myſelf the pleaſure to call and 'ſee how you are in the morning.'

This gave the whole affair a new face; and threw the biſhop's lady into a meditation as profound as his lord-ſhip's. 'Can this be poſſible?' ſaid ſhe to herſelf, 'and yet how could ſhe have the face to ſtand it out ſo, 'if it was not true? But then it was but a dream! Aye, 'but my huſband ſays dreams are not to be ſlighted; and 'he ſhould know more than I, at leaſt of thoſe things 'that are to be found in books. And what if it ſhould

'be

'be ſo after all? and that I ſhould take place of Mrs. '——, and Mrs. ——, and Mrs. ——, and all the 'reſt of the biſhops' ladies! That would be charming! 'and I believe in my ſoul I ſhall; for I have always 'looked upon them with a contempt that ſhewed I 'ſhould be one day their ſuperior. Well, *Happy come* '*lucky*, ſays the proverb; my endeavours ſhall not 'be wanting, as I promiſed Mrs. ——, whoſe five 'hundred pounds will be a pretty earneſt of the archbi-'ſhoprick.'

Having thus argued herſelf into a kind of belief of the dream, ſhe went in to his lordſhip, whom ſhe found abſorbed in thought about the *viſion*: 'Well, my dear,' ſaid ſhe, ſitting down by him; 'what is your opinion 'of this ſtrange matter? I own it is above my compre-'henſion! At firſt, I imagined ſhe might have been 'only in jeſt, and have invented the whole ſtory merely 'to divert your lowneſs of ſpirits; but when I went out 'with her into the next parlour, and put it home to her, 'ſhe ſtill perſiſted in it, and confirmed the truth of what 'ſhe ſaid by ſuch aſſeverations, that I could not avoid 'believing her.'

'But, my dear,' replied his lordſhip, 'ſhe ſaid ſhe 'told you her dream before ſhe came in here, or had 'heard a word of his grace's illneſs!'—'She moſt cer-'tainly did, my lord; and with other circumſtances, that 'make the whole ſtill more ſurpriſing! Pray, what time 'did the doctor die, my dear?'—'About half an hour 'after four.'—'That is moſt wonderful! And pray, 'my dear, who is to have his living? or are you under 'any engagement about it?'—'No, child, I am not; 'nor have I determined whom to give it to. But why 'do you aſk theſe queſtions? What are they to the 'purpoſe of the dream?'—'I ſhall tell you, my lord. 'You muſt know then that ſhe came here about four 'o'clock, juſt as I had got up from dinner, all in the 'greateſt hurry; and with a kind of wildneſs, I do not 'know how, in her looks, told me her dream; but with 'ſome circumſtances that I know her baſhfulneſs would

'not

'not permit her to mention before you; and theſe were, 'that I had bought the diamond necklace, ſhe thought 'I had on at court, with five hundred pounds which I 'had won from her, on a wager that you would give her 'huſband the doctor's living. Now, as he was not even 'ſick at the time of her telling me this, there could be 'no deſign in it; and this is what makes me take the 'more notice of the matter.'

'But are you ſure, child, that ſhe told you this ſo 'early as four o'clock?'—'Rather before it, my dear; 'and what makes me ſo poſitive about it is, that a 'little after ſhe had finiſhed her ſtory, ſhe happened to 'look at her watch, but it was down, and ſo ſhe aſked 'me what o'clock it was by mine, that ſhe might ſet 'by it; and I remember it wanted exactly ſix minutes 'of four.'—'Pray, let me look at your watch; have 'you not altered it ſince?'—No, my dear! but why do 'you aſk?'—Becauſe it is nine minutes faſter than 'mine, and it was juſt half an hour paſt four by his 'watch, as they told me, when he died, and his and 'mine were exactly together; ſo that the ſix minutes 'which your watch wanted of four, and the nine mi- 'nutes it is faſter than mine, make a quarter before 'four, which was three quarters before he died. This 'is moſt wonderful! for there could be no deſign or art 'in it. This is moſt wonderful! But there have been 'many revelations made in dreams, even in our own 'times; as for inſtance, that in Drelincourt; for it 'could be no other than a dream; and that other of the 'great Duke of Buckingham's riſe, and afterwards of 'his death, as it is moſt judiciouſly and faithfully re- 'preſented by the Reverend Hiſtorian*, not to mention 'many more. As to the doctor's living, my dear, I 'make you a compliment of it; you may give it to 'whom you pleaſe: though the curate is a very learned 'and good man, and has a large family; beſide that he 'has been recommended to me by the whole pariſh, 'whom his long reſidence among them, for he has been

'there

* Echard.

'there above thirty years, has made love and reſpect 'him as a father.'—'Then let them provide for him, 'like dutiful children. What aſſurance! to pretend to 'dictate to you, as if you were not the proper judge of 'ſuch matters! If it was for no other reaſon I would 'not give it to him, to teach them their duty and diſ-'tance another time.'

'There may be ſomething in that: I do not like ſuch 'interfering in my conduct neither; and therefore you 'may give it to whom you pleaſe. And her huſband 'is a man of learning and good character too, who will 'not diſcredit any preferment; but take care that you 'do not any thing improper. As to your wager, there 'is no harm in that; but even ſo, it ſhould be kept a 'ſecret; I muſt know nothing of the matter.'—'I 'thank you, my dear lord; I ſhall be ſure to obſerve 'your directions; and the accompliſhment of this part 'of the dream I take an happy preſage of the reſt; but 'you muſt not be wanting to yourſelf; you had better, 'I think, go to her grace, and ſee what may offer to 'promote our hopes.'—'That is not a bad thought my 'dear; but it grows late; in the morning we ſhall ſee 'what is to be done.' Saying this, they withdrew whither we muſt not follow them; for of the genial bed 'with moſt myſterious reverence I deem.'

CHAP. XLVI.

Hiſtory of the dreamer. She loſes her wager, which ſhe pays with pleaſure. His lordſhip waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble inſtance of charity. Chryſal enters into the ſervice of her grace.

I Have obſerved your ſurpriſe and admiration at the ready preſence of mind and confidence of my late miſtreſs, who could, in a moment, invent ſuch a ſtory, and perſiſt in it ſo ſteadily, as not only to impoſe upon the biſhop's eaſy credulity, but even upon his wife alſo, who was, in a manner, in the ſecret of her deſign, but could not interrupt my ſtory to ſatisfy it ſooner, by giving you her hiſtory.

She was a diſtant relation to a noble lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependent. This occaſioned her being taken into his family; where ſhe lived ſeveral years as an humble companion to his lady. As ſhe was handſome, his lordſhip had a mind for a nearer relation with her; but an unfaſhionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the ſtrongeſt hatred, for fear ſhe ſhould inform his lady, to whom ſhe was not more agreeable, and upon the ſame account; as her obſerving temper had given her an opportunity of ſeeing much more than her ladyſhip deſired to have her tell.

This made her ſituation very unhappy in the family; and inclined her to hearken to the addreſſes of the chaplain, to whom his lordſhip gave a ſmall vicarage with her, as did his lady five hundred pounds, that they might part decently, and not provoke her to ſpeak. As for herſelf, you have ſeen that nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the ſtate which ſhe was bred in improved, or rather ſharpened into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enables her to take the advantage of all its follies. But to return to the biſhop and his lady. This affair had made ſuch an impreſſion on their minds, that they could dream of nothing elſe all night but pomp and precedence, which effectually ſecured the grant in favor of my late miſtreſs from all danger of revocation.

They were ſcarce ſeated to breakfaſt, when word was brought them that ſhe was below; upon which ſhe was immediately invited up, her company being too agreeable to admit of any diſtance or reſerve.

The compliments of the morning being paid on all ſides, his lordſhip, with a look of great benevolence, aſked her for her huſband, and if he was at home; to which ſhe anſwered that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his lordſhip, if he had any commands to honour him with. 'None that will be diſagreeable I hope,' replied his lordſhip, 'and if he is at leiſure.'—'At leiſure, my lord!' replied ſhe in a kind of rapture, for

a wink

a wink from the lady had explained the matter to her. ‘ He is, he muſt be at leiſure! No buſineſs can interfere ‘ with his duty! I'll ſtep for him this moment.’— ‘ You need not give yourſelf that trouble, madam,’ returned his lordſhip. ‘ John, do you go and tell Mr.— ‘ that I ſhould be glad to ſpeak with him. For, ma- ‘ dam, I think I cannot do leſs than reward his learn- ‘ ing, piety, and good life, with the living of the poor ‘ doctor. It is what I have long reſolved, though I ‘ never mentioned it before, becauſe I would not torture ‘ him with expectations; and I give it to him now, ‘ thus early and unaſked, to ſpare his modeſty, and to ‘ ſave myſelf from the ſolicitations of others.’—‘ Long ‘ live, God bleſs your grace;’ ſaid ſhe, throwing her- ſelf at his feet, and embracing his knees in ecſtaſy, ‘ for ‘ ſo I ſee it will be, every thing will come out juſt ac- ‘ cording to my dream! I could not forbear ſending to ‘ the late archbiſhop's, juſt before I came here, and the ‘ porter, (for I would not ſend a ſervant, for fear my ‘ known attachment to your lordſhip ſhould make it ‘ taken notice of) brought me word, *that he was at* ‘ *peace*.’—This completed the biſhop's faith, and pre- vented his ſending to enquire, for the ſame delicate rea- ſon that ſhe gave.

‘ I muſt wiſh you joy, madam,’ ſaid the biſhop's ‘ lady, ‘ of this advance in your fortune! Though I ‘ am almoſt angry that my lord did not let me into ‘ the ſecret. I have loſt ſome hours happineſs by his ‘ reſerve; for I always make the happineſs of my friends ‘ my own.’—‘ Dear madam, I thank you; on my knees ‘ I thank, I pray for you both! And give me leave, ‘ madam, to wiſh *you* joy of his lordſhip's promotion, ‘ and of your juſt advance in rank, as well as of all the ‘ ornaments belonging to it!’—‘ The necklace, I ſup- ‘ poſe you mean? Ha, ha, ha!’—‘ I do, indeed, dear ‘ madam, and of every other happineſs that can attend ‘ ſo elevated a ſtation.’

Her huſband now entered, in the utmoſt agitation of ſpirits between hope and fear; for he was not a ſtranger

to his wife's ſcheme; (indeed he had ſuggeſted the firſt hint of the bet himſelf, but with an addreſs that made her think it was her own, he ſpoke ſo diſtantly; for he always preſerved the appearance of character, even with her) and the ladies not thinking it proper to be preſent at the myſterious ceremony of the biſhop's ſinging the collation, which he did directly, to avoid giving offence, by refuſing other applications, they withdrew, when my miſtreſs was paid her bet, with as great pleaſure, by the loſer, as ſhe felt in receiving it.

The dream being thus far happily accompliſhed, the ſucceſsful dreamer and her huſband went home in the higheſt joy, at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependence, and the fears of want; while my lord prepared to pay his duty at her grace's levee, and ſee whether any thing ſhould offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he called to his lady to receive her advice, and, recollecting that he had forgot his purſe, he deſired to borrow her's, in which I was, and thus I changed my ſervice once more.

When his lordſhip entered her grace's levee, and had paid his moſt humble reſpects, he found the converſation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happened to a village in his dioceſe, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumſtances ſo moving in the account of this misfortune, as to raiſe the compaſſion of the whole company, and particularly of her grace, who ſaid, that ſhe would moſt willingly contribute to the relief of their diſtreſs, but that unluckily ſhe had not leſs than a bank-note for twenty pounds about her.

All the company, who knew the world, underſtood her grace, and dropped the ſubject; but my new maſter, who had his knowledge of mankind moſtly from books, was ſo far from taking the hint, that he thought he ſhewed his reſpect to his patroneſs, by offering to change her note, or lend her whatever money ſhe wanted.

Her grace was ſurpriſed, as the company were confounded,

founded, at the ignorant inſolence of ſuch an offer. However, as this was not an occaſion for ſhowing her reſentment, ſhe coldly told him, ſhe would trouble him for the change, and having received it, gave two guineas to the perſon who had mentioned the affair, and careleſſly threw the reſt, among which I was, into her pocket, not caring to pull out her purſe, as it was full of money.

My late maſter, pleaſed with the thought of having been inſtrumental in ſo meritorious a benevolence, diſplayed his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himſelf; (for reſpect to her grace would not permit him to exceed the half of her bounty) as did the reſt of the company, who all laughed in their ſleeves, to think how my maſter had ruined himſelf with her grace by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream to obſerve their looks, and he was ſo far from being ſenſible that he had done amiſs, that when her grace was going to retire, he boldly ſtepped up to her, and begged leave to ſpeak a word or two with her in private.

Though the aſſurance of this requeſt greatly aggravated his former offence, yet ſhe could not decently refuſe ſuch a favour to his rank, and therefore ſlightly nodded to him to follow her.

CHAP. XLVII.

The biſhop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extenſive charity. He makes her grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow proteſtants in Germany. He is ſtrangely affected at the news of the archbiſhop's recovery. Her grace's character.

THE great honour of this private audience, at firſt, put him into ſome confuſion, but, recollecting the conſequence at ſtake, he, after much heſitation, made a ſhift to tell her, that, 'ſenſible of her grace's great humanity and commiſeration for the ſufferings of the diſtreſſed, of which ſhe had juſt given ſo noble an inſtance'—'Pray, my lord, no compliments,' ſaid her grace, interrupting him with a look and accent not very encouraging, 'I am not at preſent at leiſure for them,

'and if you have no other buſineſs'—'May it pleaſe
'your grace,' replied the biſhop, 'your virtues are
'above compliment! and I come to give you an oppor-
'tunity of exerting them, not ſolely to praiſe them.'—
'I do not underſtand you, my lord; and I am in ſome
'haſte.'—'I moſt humbly beg your grace's pardon, I
'ſhall not delay you long! To come then briefly to the
'purpoſe, I muſt inform your grace, that out of the
'income which it hath pleaſed the Divine Providence,
'through your grace's means to give me, I have thought
'it my duty to lay by ſome little matter, to make a re-
'turn with, to the Divine beneficence, in charity to his
'diſtreſſed creatures. Now, as your grace's kind in-
'tereſt was the means through which this ability was
'conferred upon me, I have made bold to trouble you
'with the diſtribution of my mite.—'Me, my lord?
'You aſtoniſh me! I cannot comprehend you!'—'I
'beg your grace's indulgence for a moment. You will
'forgive this boldneſs, when you know the motive!—
'hem! hem!

'The ſufferings of my *Proteſtant* brethren in Ger-
'many, (I ſay brethren, for men ſhould know no diſ-
'tinction, but religion) their ſufferings, I ſay in this
'calamitous time of war and rapine, when the ambition
'of princes works the ruin of their people, has made
'ſuch an impreſſion upon my heart, that I come to of-
'fer this ſmall matter to your grace, to be applied to
'their relief, as your better knowledge ſhall ſee moſt
'proper: a trouble which I ſhould not have preſumed to
'give your grace, did not I know that ſuch works of
'charity are a pleaſure to you; and that the better in-
'formation, which in your high rank you muſt neceſ-
'ſarily have, will enable you to apply it more effectual-
'ly to their relief than I, in the darkneſs and ignorance
'of my humble ſtation, poſſibly can. I am almoſt
'aſhamed of the ſmallneſs of the ſum, (it is but two
'thouſand pounds) but it is all that I have yet been
'able to ſave; though I hope to give a better account
'of my ſtewardſhip another time; and that I ſhall be

'found

'found not to have buried my talent, especially if it 'should please the Divine Providence to raise me to a high-'er station, and thereby put the means more liberally 'into my power.

'I most humbly beg your grace's forgiveness of this 'intrusion of your time. I am your grace's most hum-'ble servant.'—'Stay, my lord,' returned her grace, with a look and accent softened into the most engaging affability. 'Pray do not go: I see you so seldom, except '*in the crowd*, that I cannot part with you so soon. I 'thank you for the confidence you place in me; and 'shall apply your charity to the best of my judgment. 'Poor people! they greatly want relief, and if the in-'vincible fortitude of the *Bulgarian* monarch does not 'extricate them soon, they will be entirely ruined. But 'every thing is to be hoped for from such a hero.'

'You are very good to consider the distresses of the 'poor people: there are few now who think of any thing 'but themselves; so their appetites are satisfied, they have 'no feeling for what others suffer. But, my lord, is 'there any thing that I can serve you in? You may 'depend upon my interest at all times.'—'I am much 'beholden to your grace,' replied his lordship, elevated at such an offer, and now secure as he thought of his hopes; 'I am much beholden to your grace! I have 'had too much experience of your grace's goodness to 'doubt it. Nothing that I know of at present: if any 'thing should happen, I shall be most grateful to your 'grace for your kind remembrance. We are all desir-'ous of having our power to do good enlarged.'——

'Yes, my lord; all good men, like your lordship, 'are. It is a duty to desire so. But, have you heard 'any thing of the Archbishop of———lately?'—'Not 'very lately, please your grace.'—'I believe that old 'man will never die! He was taken with a fit yesterday, 'and it was thought he would expire every moment, 'but he has got over it, and is abroad to-day as well as 'he has been for many years.'——In—d-e-e-d!'— 'What is the matter, my lord? Something seems to

'ail

'ail you.'—A—a—ſud-den—f—aint—neſs has——
'come—o—o-ver—me; I—mu-ſt—beg—y—our—
'Grace—'s—p-ardon—. I—am y—our—Grace—'s
'—m—oſt—h—h——-umble ſervant——:'—with which words he made a bad ſhift to crawl out, muttering to himſelf—'O my money! my money. O this curſed 'dream! my money! my money!'

Her grace looked earneſtly after him for a few minutes, as if loſt in thought, and then burſting into a loud laughter, 'And is it ſo, my good lord? does the 'wind ſit that way? Then I can account for your cha-'rity: Ha! ha! ha!———But you are diſappointed 'this time, and, I fear, will be the next too, if you 'do not bid better. Two thouſand for five hundred a 'year! Is that your conſcience? But it will never 'do.'———

I was now at the ſummit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite of a mighty monarch. For curioſity tempting me to take a view of my new miſtreſs's heart, as ſhe ſat at her toilet, I found myſelf eſtabliſhed there without a rival, in the moſt abſolute authority, every paſſion being ſubſervient to my rule; even the love of power, which had, in every other inſtance, diſputed the empire with me, being here my moſt abject ſlave, and encouraged for no other reaſon than ſolely to promote my intereſt; the mighty ſpirit of the immenſe maſs of gold which my miſtreſs had accumulated having taken entire poſſeſſion of her ſoul.

CHAP. VI.

The true uſe of court-favour. The biter bitten. An eaſy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The inſolence of office, in hindering an houſe to be built inſtead of a hen coop; and ſpoiling her grace's dairy. How to make the moſt of a common. A beau lord beaten by a bailiff, for walking the fields in an undreſs.

WHILE my late maſter retired, to mediate on the expoſition of dreams, and to pleaſe himſelf with the virtuous reflexion of ſo ſingular an act of charity, her grace ſat down to her toilet, where I ſaw art triumph

over

over the depredations of time, and create a beauty denied by nature.

When this ſerious work was ſo far completed that ſhe could attend to other buſineſs, one of her moſt favourite domeſtics told her, that ſhe had that very morning received an offer from a man who kept a noted beer-houſe, and ſhuffle-board, for the place of a tapſter to the Lord-Mayor, which ſhe was ſure her grace's intereſt would readily obtain. 'Tapſter!' anſwered her grace 'what 'is the value of that place? Reach me the liſt of em-'ployments, with their ſalaries and perquiſites, out of 'that drawer. Let me ſee: Tapſter to the Lord-May-'or: aye, here it is! Well, and pray what does he of-'fer for it?'—'A thouſand guineas, pleaſe your grace,' replied her woman, 'which I really think enough for 'it, conſidering every thing.'—'Do you, indeed! But 'I do not. Why, it is rated to me here, as worth five 'hundred pounds a year; and is that worth no more 'than a thouſand guineas! Does the fellow value his 'own life only at two years purchaſe?'—'Five hundred 'pounds a year! How can that be? The ſalary is no 'more than ſixty; there muſt be ſome miſtake in your 'return.'—'The ſalary, the ſalary ſignifies nothing; 'it is the perquiſites! The perquiſites are the thing! Do 'you think any place is valued by the ſalary? The per-'quiſites of this place are very conſiderable! Let me ſee: 'Why, he buys in all the beer and gin himſelf, for which 'he can charge what price he pleaſes; and then his own 'account is taken for the quantity that is drank. Aye 'indeed: there muſt be a miſtake in my return to be 'ſure; but not of the kind you mean. The place is 'rated too low; for, with ſuch opportunities, it muſt be 'worth twice the ſum; and I ſhall enquire into that 'matter before I diſpoſe of the place. A thouſand 'guineas for ſuch a place! I wonder at the fellow's con-'ſcience to make ſuch an offer!'—'All this is very 'true; but then there are ſome circumſtances that muſt 'be conſidered on the other hand too. You know the 'Lord-Mayor's year is almoſt ended; and then, who

'knows

'knows whether his ſucceſſor will continue all the ſer-
'vants or not? This one it certainly is moſt likely he
'will not; for as he is a known enemy to gambling,
'and has publicly declared that he will put the laws in
'execution againſt all ſuch practices, it cannot be thought
'that he will permit a fellow who has kept an houſe that
'has been ſo notorious for it, and where ſo many men
'have been brought to the gallows, and their families
'to beggary, to hold a place of ſuch profit under him;
'beſides, he has people of his own to provide for, who
'have ſerved his father and himſelf in ſuch a manner as
'to deſerve his confidence and regard, ſo that every
'chance, to ſpeak in his own way, is againſt this man,
'which is ſo well known, that nobody elſe would bid
'for the thing at all; wherefore, if I may preſume to
'ſpeak my opinion, his offer ſhould be immediately ac-
'cepted.'—'There may be ſomething in what you ſay;
'but then, if it was ſo very precarious a place, do you
'think ſome of his cuſtomers would not inform him of
'it! they certainly muſt know it.'—'Why, the very
'reaſon of my deſiring your grace to cloſe with him di-
'rectly is, for fear they ſhould tell him, as they un-
'doubtedly would, if they ſuſpected his intention in the
'leaſt; but he conceals it from them; for the principal
'motive of his quitting the buſineſs he is in, and ſeek-
'ing this place, is, becauſe the greateſt part of his cuſ-
'tomers have got deeply into his debt, which he can
'never expect them to pay, while he continues his bu-
'ſineſs; whereas, he thinks, if he can get this place, it
'will be a good excuſe for his calling in his money, and
'then the lord mayor's power will protect him from their
'reſentments. This is the true ſecret of the matter;
'for, if it was not on this account, he has a much better
'opportunity of getting money where he is, than in any
'place.'—

'Well then, be it ſo! make the moſt you can of it, and
'I care not how ſoon the fellow is turned out after.—
'What is the matter? what do you laugh at?'—'I beg
'your grace's pardon, an odd thought juſt came in my head,

'but

'but it does not ſignify.'—'What is it? Come, I muſt 'know it.'—'Why, I am almoſt aſhamed to mention 'it; though it is but a trifle neither, as ſuch matters go 'now. Your grace knows that my huſband has a place 'under the lord mayor. Now it juſt came into my head, 'that when his lordſhip comes to wait upon the king, 'to be knighted, it would be no bad joke, if his majeſty 'could be prevailed on to knight my huſband alſo.'— 'Ha! ha! ha! And ſo madam has a mind to be a lady. 'Why, with all my heart. There is no great matter 'in it to be ſure! and I ſee no reaſon why you ſhould 'not have that title as well as a chandler, or ſhoemaker's 'wife. Indeed, the candidates for knighthood have run 'ſo very low of late, that a man of honour ſhould be 'aſhamed to accept of it. But that is no concern of 'mine. I get the money, and where I can do that, I 'care not if it was from Jack Ketch: let others look to 'that. Well: ſince you have taken a fancy to ſtick a 'fool's feather in your cap, tell your good man, when 'he kneels by his maſter at the important ceremony, not 'to be too haſty to riſe, and I'll take care that your 'ambition ſhall be ſatisfied; though I do not know what 'we muſt do then. Your *ladyſhip* will never condeſcend 'to put on my ſhoes, or take away the bed-pan; ſo that 'I believe I muſt look out for another ſervant.'—'Your 'grace is pleaſed to joke; but you are very well con- 'vinced that I have no ambition above your ſervice; and 'ſhall ever be proud to perform the meaneſt offices about 'you. Indeed, in this affair, I have more reſpect to 'your grace's honour, than to myſelf. While I wait 'upon you (and I would not give up that to be made a 'counteſs) I am but your ſervant, let me be called by 'what title I will: but then, I think it is not proper 'that you ſhould be waited on by common ſervants, like 'any other perſon of your apparent rank. As you are 'the fountain of all honour and nobility, you ſhould 'have nobles to attend you as well as knights, if I could 'have my wiſh. And it was this tenderneſs of your 'grace's honour that made me ſo particularly affected at

'what

'what happened yesterday.'—'Yesterday! I do not un-
'derstand you! What happened yesterday?'—'Your
'grace may remember that you were so kind some time
'ago as to obtain leave for me, from the lord of the manor,
'to build a little poultry house in a corner of yonder com-
'mon field. I accordingly set the masons to work, and,
'liking the situation, thought it was no great trespass to
'enlarge the yard a little, and build a lodge, with a
'room or two, where I could have my clothes washed,
'and drink a dish of tea with a friend at any time when
'I might have a mind to be retired; but, behold, after
'the wall of the yard was built, and the lodge raised as
'high as the first story, the bailiff of the manor happened
'to come by, and, seeing what I intended, had the in-
'solence to fly into a passion, and, saying it was an en-
'croachment beyond the leave I had obtained, obliged
'the workmen to pull down every stone they had laid,
'though I myself, on receiving notice of it, went there,
'and told him it was by your grace's order, and for your
'own use, and alledged the expence you had been at;
'but it was all to no purpose, for he would not leave the
'place till his orders were executed: nor was this all;
'he has had the assurance also to send me word this very
'morning that he will distrain the cows, that you desired
'me to put to graze in that field, if I do not directly
'pay for their pasture, according to the rate he is pleas-
'ed to charge; which is more than I have been able to
'make of the milk; though, by your grace's recommen-
'dation, I have had such good customers for it; so that
'instead of the profit I expected to make for you of your
'dairy, your grace is like to be a loser.'—'Insolent,
'unreasonable fellow! Not to be content with his own
'extravagant profits, without hindering every body else
'of coming in for the least advantage with him: but he
'has neither shame nor conscience, or else he would be
'satisfied with plundering the ponds, and selling the fish,
'and hiring out the grass as he does, without putting
'the parish to the expence of fencing in the common, to
prevent the people even from walking over the grass!

'But,

'But, I may, ſome time or other, find a way to be even
'with him. He ſtands but badly in his maſter's favour,
'who deſpiſes ſuch avarice, and would turn him out of
'his place directly, but that unluckily he has it, under
'his hand, for life; however, I ſhall watch every op-
'portunity to return him the compliment; that I can aſ-
'ſure him. Let him take ſuch liberties with his equals!
'I'll have him to know that he ſhall treat me with more
'reſpect.'

'That is true! has your grace heard how cavalierly
'he behaved lately to the young Lord ——— ? I forget
'his name. The great beau that made ſuch a noiſe by
'dangling after the gentleman's wife.'—'I know whom
'you mean: No! I have heard nothing about him:
'what has been the matter?'—'Ha! ha! ha! I do not
'believe I ſhall be able to tell it for laughing. Why,
'your grace muſt know, that the beau was walking one
'morning, in a very plain dreſs, acroſs the upper part of
'the common, where happening to meet a farmer's maid,
'going to drive home her cows, he entered into chat
'with her, and prevailed upon her to quit the path, and
'walk with him to an unfrequented part of the field,
'where they ſat down under a clump of trees, for the
'ſake of a little very innocent converſation, to be ſure.
'Well; they had not been there long, when one of the
'under bailiffs, whom this inſolent fellow keeps to watch
'the graſs, ſeeing them go out of the road, followed
'them; and coming upon them in a very unſeaſonable
'minute, not only interrupted their converſation, but
'alſo aſked the lord (whoſe quality he never ſuſpected)
'in an imperious manner, how he dared to trample the
'graſs, and threatened to take him and his whore before
'a juſtice, and have them directly ſent to Bridewell.—
'This inſult aggravated the offence of his intruſion to
'ſuch a height, that the lord in a rage bade the ſcoun-
'drel inſtantly get out of his ſight, or he would break
'his head. Such words, from a perſon of his appear-
'ance, raiſed the inſolence of office ſo high, that the
'bailiff, without any more ado, lifted his ſtaff, and knock-

'ed his lordſhip down, where he belaboured him ſe-
'verely, repeating the word ſcoundrel between every
'blow, till the poor battered beau was in a moſt dole-
'ful plight, though he had often told him who he was,
'and roared out his quality with all his might; but the
'enraged fellow either did not, or pretended that he did
'not, believe him.

'When he had beaten him as much as he thought he
'could, without danger of the gallows, he dragged him
'along to the highway, where fortunately a coach hap-
'pened to come by, the owner of which knew his lord-
'ſhip, and took him up, ordering his ſervants to appre-
'hend the bailiff, but he was too nimble for them, and
'made his eſcape: and now finding his miſtake, and
'the danger into which he had fallen, he went directly
'to his maſter, and telling him the ſtory in the moſt fa-
'vourable manner for himſelf, prevailed upon him to
'promiſe to ſtand by him; particularly as he alledged
'that the affair had proceeded from his great care of his
'maſter's graſs, which could never be kept, if he ſhould
'be left to ſuffer for defending it.

'In the mean time, the poor lord was in ſo very bad
'a taking, that all the phyſicians and ſurgeons in town
'were gathered about him; by whoſe aſſiſtance he was
'confined to his bed for near a week. As ſoon as he
'was permitted to ſpeak, and ſee his friends, he ſent
'directly to the head bailiff, to let him know how his
'man had uſed him; but all the ſatisfaction he could ob-
'tain, even when he went and applied in perſon, was to
'have the fellow removed to another part of the common;
'nor could he obtain this, till he declared that he would
'make his complaint directly to the lord of the manor,
'if he had not ſome redreſs. It is ſaid, he talked of
'challenging him, but he is one of the grand jury of the
'court-leet, and therefore cannot be called to an account
'that way.'

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIX.

An odd visitor to a lady. The mystery of stock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her grace's kind intentions for honest Aminadab. Another visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve for a broken character.

BY this time the mysteries of the toilet were over, and my mistress's face finished for the day, when a person entered to her, whose appearance was far from promising such an intimacy with a lady of her rank.

The most shabby, squalid dress, covered a distorted carcase, not much above four feet high, but so gross, that, laid upon his back, he would have cast a shadow near as long as when he stood upright. A deep olive complexion, an aquiline nose, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greasy curled beard, made the beauty of his face correspond with the elegance of his figure.

This extraordinary person approached her grace without introduction or ceremony, and, entering immediately upon business, told her, 'that he came to know if she 'meant to *buy in* that day, for the report raised in the 'alley, by *their* express from abroad, had given such a 'stroke to the funds, that they had tumbled to the ground; 'but would most certainly rise again the next day, as 'soon as the news which had arrived that morning should 'be known; which could not be kept a secret as the 'people wanted something to keep up their spirits among 'so many miscarriages, and divert them from making 'too close enquiries into the conduct of affairs.'

'Why, my honest friend *Aminadab!*' replied her grace, 'I must be directed in these matters by you. If you 'think there is any thing to be got by *buying in* to-day, 'with all my heart: though I must own I cannot con-'ceive why you should *sell out* the very last week to *buy* '*in* this.'

'Ah! my lady,' returned Aminadab, 'there is a 'mystery in all business, and in none greater than ours. 'The *Bulgarian* king's success last week raised people's 'spirits so high, that they thought the world was to be

'all their own, and therefore bought at any price. Now 'that was the time for a prudent perſon to ſell, as I ad- 'viſed your grace; which we had no ſooner done, than 'inſtantly comes an expreſs *(of our own)* with an ac- 'count that the enemy had turned upon him in their re- 'treat, and entirely vanquiſhed the vanquiſhers.

'This news quite overthrew the ſpirits raiſed by the 'former, and made every one eager to ſell out at any 'loſs, for fear the enemy ſhould *get wings and fly over*, 'to take all they had. Now, as this was but a terror 'raiſed by ourſelves, we take the advantage of it, and 'ſo buy in, when others are ſelling out at twenty per cent 'cheaper than we ourſelves ſold out laſt week, when the 'madneſs bent the other way, and may perhaps ſell again 'the next, when another packet ſhall ſet things right, 'and bring the people back their ſenſes. For the ſenſes 'of the people of this country are as inconſtant as the 'ſea, depending entirely upon the winds that blow them 'news.'

'But is it really poſſible that any people can be ſuch 'fools?'—O, pleaſe your grace, they are only too rich! 'they have more money than they know what to do with; 'that is all.'—'Then Aminadab, we will eaſe them of 'ſome of the burthen. And would it not be better to 'conceal this news for another day; might not that make 'them fall ſtill lower?'—'But, my lady, the people 'want the good news.'—'The people may hang them- 'ſelves in deſpair! I care not, ſo I get money.'—'The 'government though.'—'What is the government to 'me? I will get all I can, and then leave them to them- 'ſelves, to ſink or ſwim as they will; it is all one to me.' —'That is true; your grace ſays right. A people who 'do not know, or, at leaſt, will not follow their own in- 'tereſt, are not worth any perſon's care, longer than 'while he can make ſomething of them. But we muſt 'reſerve that ſtroke for another time. This news has 'got into the offices, and nothing there is a ſecret, you 'know. Beſides, the *panic* was too violent to laſt; it 'begins to wear off already: in another day they would

'recover

'recover their ſenſes of themſelves. I think, therefore, 'with your grace's approbation, to buy in all I can to-'day; without you had rather lay out your money in 'the ſupplies for the proteſtants of Germany.'—'With 'all my heart, if you can make as much of it that way 'as in the funds; but not otherwiſe. I would not loſe 'one ſhilling for any people under heaven!'

'Your grace has a juſt notion of the world, and of the 'value of money that governs it. Indeed, I muſt ſay, 'that the terms for theſe ſupplies are very unreaſonable, 'conſidering how ſuch things have been done for ſome 'time paſt. It is expected that people ſhould bring in 'their money without any *premium*, or other advantage, 'than what was publicly calculated for, at the granting 'them. But theſe œconomiſts will find themſelves miſta-'ken. The world is wiſer now a-days than to give up ad-'vantages which they have once gotten poſſeſſion of. As 'to that affair, therefore, I ſhould think it better to let 'it ſtand a little longer, till the neceſſity becomes more 'urgent, and then they will be glad to come into our 'terms, if it were not that the poor people may be ruined 'in the mean time; ſo that indeed I am at a loſs what to 'adviſe your grace to do in ſo nice an affair.'

'Why, let them be ruined then: it is not my fault; 'nor is it my buſineſs to ſave them; nor will I part with 'a ſhilling to do it. Beſides, if they do ſuffer by the 'delay, thoſe who gave them this ſupply to prevent their 'ruin, may give them another to repair it.'—'I cannot 'but admire your grace's judgment in all things. You 'are above the fooliſh weakneſs of nature, and have the 'noble reſolution to ſee your own family periſh, rather 'than injure your own intereſt to relieve them. I ſhall 'obey your grace in all things. I go now to *the* alley, 'where buſineſs will ſoon begin.'—'Do, honeſt Ami-'nadab, and fear not, though I could not procure an 'eſtabliſhment for your whole nation, as I would have 'done, I certainly will for your family, and that is 'enough for you. Your ſon ſhall be made a *baronet* 'at leaſt, you have riches enough to ſupport the title.'

'Your grace is very good; our people are all ſatisfied
'of your kind intentions: but, alas, that was a ſevere
'diſappointment to us, after coſting us ſo much money.
'The children of the lord weep over it in their ſyna-
'gogues, and the daughters of Sion lament it in their
'ſongs; but my houſhold ſhall rejoice in thy favour, and
'the labours of my life prove my gratitude for it.'

Honeſt Aminadab was no ſooner gone, than there entered an agent, ſeemingly of another nature, this dealing in honour, as the other did in money; but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both being ultimately the ſame.

'May it pleaſe your grace,' ſaid he, advancing with due reverence and ceremony, 'I come to wait upon you
'about that place in the ———: that gentleman will
'not, indeed cannot, give one ſhilling more for it.'—
'Then, let the other have it; I will not loſe five-pence,
'much leſs five hundred pounds, for him.'—'But,
'pleaſe your grace, you know what grounds he has to
'expect it on; beſides your promiſe, which cannot well
'be broken through, it was ſo poſitive.'—'My pro-
'miſe was only conditional (in my own intention) that
'he ſhould give me as much as another, and in no other
'ſenſe will I keep it. As for his grounds of expecta-
'tions I regard them not: let him make the moſt of
'them where he can.'—'Juſt as your grace pleaſes; I
'only took the liberty of ſpeaking my own opinion, but
'always in ſubmiſſion to your's. Not but I muſt own
'I am apprehenſive of this gentleman's reſentment,
'though not immediately for myſelf, ſo much as for
'your grace's character, with which he may be pro-
'voked to make too free upon ſuch an affair.'—'Ah,
'that is liberty, your boaſted Engliſh liberty, to ſpeak
'diſreſpectfully of your ſuperiors. But I deſpiſe what-
'ever he can ſay: nor will I give up my own way for
'fear of his impertinence.'—'Very right, your grace
'is very right. It were by no means fit that you
'ſhould: then it is to be conſidered, whether this breach
'of promiſe may not be attended with inconveniences

that

'that may overbalance the advantage, as it may make 'others afraid to deal with you at another time.'—'I 'will venture that: none can come to me but for their 'own advantage, and while they can find that, they 'will ſcarce ſtay away for punctilios. So, let me hear 'no more of this, but cloſe with the other directly.'—

'Will not your grace pleaſe to abate of your demand 'for that place in Ireland? I really fear you rate it too 'high.'—'Not a ſhilling: I will not abate a ſhilling: 'ſurely I ought to know the value of things in Ireland 'by this time; I have had ſufficient dealings there to 'teach me; it has been my privy purſe for many years.' 'But what I fear is, that if your grace does not fix upon 'ſome one directly, the lord deputy may, and that 'would diſappoint you; for this place has ever been 'immediately in his gift, and it would reflect a kind 'of diſhonour on him to give it up.'—'Diſhonour, in- 'deed! I am much concerned for his honour, certainly: 'and as for his naming any one to contradict me, I be- 'lieve he will be cautious how he does that. The ex- 'ample of his predeceſſor will teach him.'—'How- 'ever, if your grace pleaſes to prevent any diſputes, I 'will wait on him, and tell him that you have a friend, 'whom you deſign to recommend.'—'With all my 'heart; you may if you will. But, as to the price, I 'will not abate one ſhilling, as I ſaid before. Do not 'I know that places in that country are either mere pen- 'ſions, without any thing to do; or even neceſſity of 'ever governing there at all: or where that cannot be 'diſpenſed with from the nature of the place, that no 'learning, no abilities are requiſite. If it was here, in- 'deed, where knowledge in a profeſſion is abſolutely ne- 'ceſſary to a place in it, there might be ſomething in 'higgling about the price, but for a coward to ſcruple 'paying for being made a general, or a blockhead a 'judge, there can be nothing more unreaſonable; and 'I will not hear another word about it. But what have 'you done about thoſe titles which I gave you to diſ- 'poſe of?'—'Really, I do not know what to ſay to your

grace

'grace about them: the bent of the people does not 'seem to incline to honours of late.'—'No, I thought 'they were always as good as ready money; especially 'with those who have more money than sense, and think 'it easier to buy, than earn honour by merit. An Irish 'title was the constant refuge of those sons of fortune, 'who not being born in the rank of gentlemen, or hav-'ing forfeited it by their villainies, were desirous of 'changing their names for sonorous titles, to hide their 'disgrace, as it were, under an heap of honours, which 'in reality only make them the more exposed to the 'view, and consequently to the censure of the world. 'But I find even that imaginary sense of honour is gone 'out of fashion, and the shadow is in no more request 'than the substance, at present. But since they are 'grown such a drug, even make the most you can of 'them: sell them to whoever will buy; I shall take no 'exceptions to persons.'

'I shall certainly do the best I can for your grace, 'though they have been so oddly given away of late, 'that I verily believe people are ashamed of taking 'them, for fear of being laughed at. Rattles are given 'to children, but titles to old men, to divert them; to 'some, in reward for not doing *the very worst* possibly 'in their power; and to others, for doing *nothing at 'all*.—But, pray, has your grace seen the old colonel 'yet? He got his commission yesterday: I wish he 'may mean your grace fairly.'—'Why? sure you do 'not imagine he can have the assurance to think of play-'ing me a trick?'—'I do not positively say so; but his 'behaviour has been very mysterious.'

Just then a servant let her grace know, that the very colonel, of whom they were talking, desired leave to wait upon her. 'I thought so,' said she, 'show him up: 'I thought he would not dare to trifle with *me*.'

CHAP. L.

The colonel puts the old soldier upon her grace. Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the bishop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad.

THE colonel advanced to her grace with the aſſurance of conſcious virtue ſparkling in his eye, though ſharpened by a caſt of indignation. 'I come,' ſaid he, 'pleaſe your grace, to return you my thanks for your 'favours: I have got my commiſſion, and had the 'honour, juſt now, to kiſs his majeſty's hand upon it. 'As your recommendation was more effectual to pro-'cure me this reward than the labours of a life which 'has not been undiſtinguiſhed in the ſervice, I thought 'it my duty to make your grace this acknowledgment, 'and to offer you any ſervice in the power of an honeſt 'heart, and no bad hand, in return.'—'Colonel,' replied her grace, 'I am glad it has been in my power 'to ſerve a man of your character, and I do not deſire 'any ſuch return.'—'I am much obliged to your grace 'for your good opinion,' returned he, 'which I hope I 'ſhall never forfeit. I thank God, my character will 'not diſgrace your recommendation; nor ſhall you ever 'have reaſon to bluſh at the mention of my name. I 'have the honour to be your grace's moſt humble ſer-'vant.'

'But, colonel,' ſaid the gentleman, the agent, who ſtood by, 'though her grace has no occaſion for ſuch a 'return as you offer, having no quarrels to be fought, 'there is a return of another nature which you ſhould 'not forget, eſpecially as you promiſed it too.'—'Why 'look you, ſir,' replied the colonel, 'as to that matter, 'it is moſt certain that I did, ſomething like, promiſe 'ſome ſuch thing, but when I have told the whole affair 'honeſtly to her grace, I am ſure ſhe will be above de-'manding it.'—'Sir,' ſaid her grace, 'I do not deſire 'to hear any thing more about it! And I muſt tell you, 'that you have behaved like an old knave.'—'Say an 'old ſoldier, rather, madam,' replied he, with ſome warmth, 'the other is a term I am not uſed to.'—'A 'nice diſtinction truly, and well worthy of a man of 'honour,' ſaid the agent with a ſneer.—'Have a care, 'ſir, guard your expreſſions; my reſpect, my obliga-'tions to her grace will make me bear any thing from

'her;

'her; but I muſt be ſo free as to tell you, that I have 'not the ſame ſentiments for you.'—'What are you 'going to make a riot in my apartments!'—'Not in 'the leaſt, madam; my reſpect for your grace is a ſuffi-'cient ſecurity from that. I would only hint it to that 'gentleman, that he may not always have the protection 'of your grace's preſence; that is all, madam.'—'You 'are a knaviſh old ruffian. But I ſhall take care that 'you do not come off ſo.'—'As your grace pleaſes for 'that. By the laws of my country I cannot loſe my 'commiſſion while I do my duty, nor will my gracious 'maſter be influenced to do me wrong, though, in the 'multiplicity of greater affairs, my ſervices, my hard-'ſhips could not reach his eye. But as I would not 'bear the imputation of any crime, much more ſo black 'ones as diſhoneſty or ingratitude, you muſt give me 'leave to ſet this affair in a juſt light to your grace 'now, eſpecially as I may never have another opportu-'nity of doing myſelf that juſtice.

'Enraged almoſt to deſperation to find, that thirty 'years ſervice, the merits of which were often written 'in my blood, and ſtand recorded in theſe ſcars, were 'not ſufficient to procure me the regular advances of my 'rank, without a merit of another nature, I reſolved to 'quit the barren paths which I had ſo long purſued in 'vain, and try thoſe methods which I ſaw practiſed with 'ſucceſs by others: I therefore applied myſelf to your 'grace, who ſeemed ſtruck with my hardſhips, and 'promiſed me your favour, referring me, for more par-'ticular information, to this gentleman, who would 'have lowered my ſenſe of your goodneſs, by loading it 'with terms which were not in my power to fulfil.

'Had your grace mentioned them to me yourſelf, I 'ſhould moſt certainly have owned my inability; but, 'coming from him, I looked upon them as the fineſſe of 'his own art, which it was not unjuſtifiable to return 'with a feint of mine; and therefore I gave an equivo-'cal acquieſcence with his propoſal, for he dares not 'ſay I made a particular or poſitive promiſe of any thing.

'If

'If I have done wrong in this I am miſtaken, and 'ſorry for it, but ſtill it is not within the article of war, 'that makes an error in judgment criminal, becauſe it 'was not againſt an enemy; but by all the rules of war, 'and that is my profeſſion, and the only one I have 'ſtudied, it is allowable to oppoſe art to art, and try to 'foil the devil at his own weapons. This is what I 'have done; and the ſucceſs of this ſtratagem, which 'has effected by a *coup de main* what I had been making 'regular advances to ſo long in vain, proves the juſt-'neſs of my plan, and muſt extort your grace's appro-'bation, when the paſſion raiſed by this gentleman's 'mercenary influence ſhall cool.'

Saying this the veteran marched off in triumph, leaving my miſtreſs and her agent ſtaring at each other in the ſtrongeſt ſurpriſe.

Her grace found *utterance* firſt, and having no other object of her rage, turned all its violence upon her agent. 'So then,' ſaid ſhe, 'after all, I find the old ruffian 'has outwitted you, with a general promiſe, or no 'promiſe at all, it ſeems, for you did not dare to con-'tradict him. I thought, Sir, that I had cautioned you 'before againſt this very thing, and given you poſitive 'orders to take nothing but the money. But you ſhall 'pay for your neglect: you ſhall make good the loſs 'to me. As for the old ruffian, I will ſpeak to his ge-'neral, and have him broke for a cheat. Talk to me 'of his ſervices! what are his ſervices to me! But I will 'have him broke; his example ſhall terrify others from 'attempting to abuſe me ſo again.'

'I wiſh it were proper or poſſible,' replied her agent, as ſoon as want of breath made her ſtop, 'for your grace 'to have him puniſhed for his inſolence; but ſuch a 'tongue as his might lay matters too open, if once ſet 'a-going, for you ſee he is not to be over-awed to any 'thing. As for his commiſſion, there is no loſs in 'it; for it was ordered for him before I applied; though 'I made him think it was obtained by your intereſt, to 'try what I could bring him to. Your grace may be

'aſſured

'assured that I would not have taken any promise, had 'it been otherwise; and I was just going to tell you 'this, when his coming prevented me.'—'It may be so,' returned she, 'but I shall be better satisfied of it, before 'I give up your making good the loss.'

The agent was relieved from further persecution for that time by the entrance of a messenger, who was going to Germany, and called to know if her grace had any commands for her friends there. 'None but my good 'wishes and prayers for their deliverance,' replied she, with a deep drawn sigh, 'which are constantly offered 'up for them. I am sorry I am not able to send them 'any relief from myself; but I have nothing in my 'power, no places, no opportunities of getting any thing: 'these few pieces' taking about a dozen guineas from her pocket, where she had thrown the bishops change of her note, 'are all, at present, in my possession; give 'them to my dear mother, with my duty, and tell her 'I will send her the clothes she wrote for, as soon as 'possible; and assure the rest of my friends of my con-'stant attention to their interest.'

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

Bayerische Staatsbibliothek München

BSB Bayerische StaatsBibliothek
MDZ Münchener DigitalisierungsZentrum Digitale Bibliothek

Johnstone, Charles, 1719-1800

Chrysal or the adventures of a Guinea

Bd.: 1 (1797)

London 1797
P.o.angl. 63-1
urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb10745519-1